

EVANGELICAL BIBLE COLLEGE OF WESTERN AUSTRALIA



HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS.

WITH REFERENCE TO PROPHECY AND THE GREEK PERFECT TENSE

VOLUME 22

PREVIEW OF THE CHURCH AGE

by

DR PETER MOSES AND DR JOHN MCEWAN

[BOOK 74-22]

REVISED 2021

WHO IS JESUS CHRIST?

Professor Simon Greenleaf was one of the most eminent lawyers of all time. His "Laws of Evidence" for many years were accepted by all States in the United States as the standard methodology for evaluating cases. He was teaching law at a university in the United States when one of his students asked Professor Greenleaf if he would apply his "Laws of Evidence" to evaluate an historical figure. When Greenleaf agreed to the project he asked the student who was to be the subject of the review. The student replied that the person to be examined would be Jesus Christ. Professor Greenleaf agreed to undertake the examination of Jesus Christ and as a result, when he had finished the review, Simon Greenleaf personally accepted the Lord Jesus Christ as his Saviour.

Professor Greenleaf then sent an open letter to all jurists in the United States jurists saying in part "I personally have investigated one called Jesus Christ. I have found the evidence concerning him to be historically accurate. I have also discovered that Jesus Christ is more than a human being, he is either God or nothing and having examined the evidence it is impossible to conclude other than he is God. Having concluded that he is God I have accepted him as my personal Saviour. I urge all members of the legal profession to use the "Laws of Evidence" to investigate the person of the Lord Jesus Christ and if you find that he is wrong expose him as a faker but if not consider him as your Saviour and Lord"

HOW CAN I BE SAVED?

Salvation is available for all members of the human race.

Salvation is the most important undertaking in all of God's universe. The salvation of sinners is never on the basis of God's merely passing over or closing His eyes to sin. God saves sinners on a completely righteous basis consistent with the divine holiness of His character. This is called grace. It relies on God so man cannot work for salvation it neither can he deserve it. We need to realise that the creation of this vast unmeasured universe was far less an undertaking than the working out of God's plan to save sinners.

However the acceptance of God's salvation by the sinner is the most simple thing in all of life. One need not be rich, nor wise nor educated. Age is no barrier nor the colour of one's skin. The reception of the enormous benefits of God's redemption is based upon the simplest of terms so that there is no one in all this wide universe who need be turned away.

How do I become a Christian?

There is but one simple step divided into three parts. First of all I have to recognise that I am a sinner (Romans 3:23; 6:23; Ezekiel 18:4; John 5:24).

Secondly realising that if I want a relationship with Almighty God who is perfect, and recognising that I am not perfect, I need to look to the Lord Jesus Christ as the only Saviour (1 Corinthians 15:3; 1 Peter 2:24; Isaiah 53:6; John 3:16).

Thirdly, by the exercise of my own free will I personally receive the Lord Jesus Christ as my Saviour, believing that He died personally for me and that He is what He claims to be in an individual, personal and living way (John 1:12; 3:36; Acts 16:31; 4:12).

The results of Salvation

The results of this are unbelievably wonderful.
 My sins are taken away (John 1:29)
 I possess eternal life now (1 John 5:11,12),
 I become a new creature in Christ [2 Corinthians 5:17),
 The Holy Spirit takes up His residence in my life (1 Corinthians 6:19)
 And I will never perish (John 10:28-30).

This truthfully is life's greatest transaction. This is the goal of all people; this is the ultimate of our existence. We invite and exhort any reader who has not become a Christian by trusting in the Lord Jesus Christ to follow these simple instructions and be born again eternally into God's family (Matthew 11:28; John 1:12; Acts 4:12; 16:31).

© Evangelical Bible College of Western Australia 2021

Many other Christian resources are available freely from our internet web site: www.ebcwa.org.au and www.orakeibaptist.co.nz for weekly messages.

For further information contact Dr Peter Moses at pjmoses@bigpond.com.au

We encourage you to freely copy and distribute these materials to your Pastor and friends. You only need written permission from EBCWA if you intend using the materials in publications for resale. We encourage wide distribution freely!

CONTENTS

		JOHN	PAGE
	PREFACE AND INTRODUCTION		3
146 A	THE PROMISED RETURN OF CHRIST	14:1-3	6
146 B	CHRIST ANSWERS THOMAS	14:4-7	17
146 C	CHRIST ANSWERS PHILIP	14:8-20	24
146 D	CHRIST ANSWERS JUDAS	14:21-31	48
146 E	RELATIONSHIP OF BELIEVERS TO CHRIST	15:1-11	63
146 F	RELATIONSHIP OF BELIEVERS TO EACH OTHER	15:12-17	77
146 G	RELATIONSHIP OF BELIEVERS TO THE WORLD	15:18-25	85
146 H	PROMISE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT	15:26-16:15	95
146 I	PREDICTIONS OF CHRIST'S DEATH AND RESURRECTION	16:16-33	107
146 J	CHRIST PRAYS FOR HIMSELF	17:1-5	119
146 K	CHRIST PRAYS FOR HIS DISCIPLES	17:6-19	127
146 L	CHRIST PRAYS FOR ALL BELIEVERS	17:20-26	139
	DOCTRINES		145
	HARMONY		147

PREFACE TO THE EBCWA HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS PROJECT 2021

We decided early in 2021 to upgrade the Harmony of the Gospels series, which was originally published in a series of volumes almost 20 years ago with volume 1 appearing in July 2002. These volumes were revised some 10 years ago. The complete Harmony is currently published in 27 volumes as seen below. The numbering of the books for this major upgrade will remain the same.

The completion of the Greek Perfect Tense project in 2018-2019, where around 1200 individual occurrences of the Perfect Tense verbs were reviewed, now allows us to incorporate additional value into this revision of the Harmony of the Gospels. This was published in 21 volumes including a series of parallel workbooks

The Perfect Tense project uncovered 8 categories, [1] Unbeliever, [2] Believer, [3] God the Father, [4] God the Son, [5] God the Holy Spirit, [6] The Church, [7] Israel and [8] People and Places, and covered the whole New Testament. The spread of these categories of perfect tense verbs, both in the New Testament as a whole, and the Gospel, is as follows.

Category	Unbeliever	Believer	Father	Son	Spirit	Church	Israel	Others
NT	41	158	112	274	109	241	108	151
Gospels	9	16	42	195	46	34	60	64

The predominance of the perfect tense verbs relating to the Lord Jesus Christ in both of the categories is noted with the percentage of the Son increasing from 22.9% within the entire New Testament, to 41.8% when the Gospels are taken as a separate group.

The focus in the Gospels is therefore on the Lord Jesus Christ, the Author and Finisher of our faith.

The new revision of the Harmony of the Gospels will also contain Prophecies fulfilled at the First Advent demonstrated in the Gospels, showing how there is an interweaving of different facets of God's Eternal Plan as a reality to encourage us all.

LIST OF VOLUMES IN THE 2021 HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS

BOOK NO	TITLE
74-1	THE COMING OF CHRIST
74-2	JOHN THE BAPTIST AND NICODEMUS
74-3	EARLY MINISTRY OF CHRIST IN GALILEE
74-4	HEALING AND THE SABBATH
74-5	THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT
74-6	CHRIST'S MINISTRY IN GALILEE
74-7	OPPOSITION FROM THE PHARISEES
74-8	PARABLES AND THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN
74-9	MIRACLES
74-10	MINISTRY OF THE DISCIPLES
74-11	THE BREAD OF LIFE
74-12	MOUNT OF TRANSFIGURATION
74-13	THE LAST JOURNEY
74-14	FEAST OF DEDICATION
74-15	MINISTRY IN PEREA
74-16	RAISING OF LAZARUS
74-17	THE RICH YOUNG RULER
74-18	PRESENTATION OF THE KING
74-19	CONFLICT WITH AUTHORITY
74-20	THE OLIVET DISCOURSE
74-21	THE LAST PASSOVER
74-22	PREVIEW OF THE CHURCH AGE
74-23	BETRAYAL AND TRIALS
74-24	THE DEATH OF JESUS CHRIST
74-25	RESURRECTION
74-26	HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS – KING JAMES VERSION
74-27	HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS – MODERN PARAPHRASE
74-28	COMPENDIUM OF DOCTRINES

INTRODUCTION

Within the Bible there are many parallels giving different aspects of the same thing. The four Biblical Gospels of course have the same focus, that is, on the person and work of the Lord Jesus Christ. The different authors have a different emphasis on aspects of the story, but have a common story.

As one approaches a harmony of the Gospels the concept adopted is that all Scripture is God Breathed and as the Holy Spirit has put all the books together there is a harmony amongst them all. This can be seen in prophecies in the Old Testament being fulfilled literally centuries later and reported on in the New Testament.

By comparing events in the four Gospels simultaneously a more complete picture of the life and work of the Lord Jesus Christ is obtained so that we may more fully appreciate what He has done for us and the magnificence of the Plan of God. That is the focus of this Harmony of the Gospels.

The analysis of the four Gospels will be on a verse by verse basis, examining the key words, background, application and doctrines together with a harmonised version of the King James Version, as well as examining problem areas of so called contradictions. The basic structure of the harmony will be based on that found in the Bible Topic Book which may be modified from time to time after evaluation of parallel texts.

The background notes on the Gospel of John and introduction are adapted from the Diploma in Theology notes in Volumes 8 to 10 of the Diploma Course of the Evangelical Bible College of Western Australia by Dr John McEwan. Our first finding in our review of the Harmony has been to suggest to all our contacts to pray about using the Harmony of the Gospels as part of the Diploma of Theology, rather than just the 110 hours of lectures on the Gospel of John alone. Save that for post-diploma work.

NEW EDITION OF THE HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS WITH PERFECT AND PROPHETIC REVIEW

The 26 volume Harmony of the Gospels was completed in 2004 to 2005 and subsequently reviewed in 2017.

Since 2017 a study of all of the Greek Perfect Tenses in the New Testament has been completed and published.

In addition work has been undertaken where Old Testament Bible Prophecies fulfilled by the Lord Jesus Christ has been examined and divided into two groups, those recorded in the Gospels and those in the rest of the New Testament.

It has been decided that elements of both the Perfect Tense and Prophecy should now be incorporated into the Harmony of the Gospels as it again reinforces the complete validity of the Scriptures as the only complete source of the truth.

The Perfect Tense project has been published in 21 volumes including workbooks, which allow a person not using the KJV to complement and publish the work using their own version.

The upgraded work will be issued in an e-book format as they are completed to form a complete package for Church, group or individual use. We encourage sharing them freely with others as you are led.

We are greatly encouraged as we prepare the contents of the final books already completed as they encourage complete confidence in God's Eternal Plan and joy in the midst of current global events concentrating on the Lord Jesus Christ the Author and Finisher of our Faith. As Christians we are in a unique place of security and can encourage others to consider and accept eternal salvation by faith in Christ.

PERFECT TENSE

We examine the effect of the Perfect Tense in this project. There are nearly 1500 Perfect Greek Tenses in the New Testament.

1. God knows everything from beginning to end, and has in the Scriptures provided the information for humanity to have a permanent relationship with Him in His Eternal Plan, through His work for mankind on the Cross.
2. The basic meaning of the Greek Perfect Tense is that something happens at a point in time, with results that go on forever.

As God knows what goes on forever He has authored the Scriptures for mankind to individually express their volition regarding divine revelation, and so make decisions for their eternal destiny.

3. Everybody born physically exists for ever. We are born physically alive but spiritually dead. We therefore have to accept that we need to be born spiritually; being “born again”. **John 3:6-18, 36.**

4. Being “born again” in Grace through Faith in Christ provides a permanent relationship with God.

5. Those who reject the way of Grace remain alive physically, but by rejecting the staggering grace of the gift of the Cross, God’s perfect grace provision, they must accept that they select the wrath of God to live forever under, rather than grace, and are condemned to having no permanent relationship with God. **John 3:36.**

6. God is totally Just and will always provide sufficient information for all to establish relationship with Him, and does so through the ministries of the Holy Spirit, so that each person can have the grace based relationship with Him; so refusal to accept the way of Grace is rebellion against God, and a direct insult to His provision of the Cross, and His plan.

GOSPELS: MATTHEW, MARK, LUKE, JOHN

1. The four Canonical Gospels are Matthew, Mark, Luke and John.

Many false “gospels” were written in the third century but were rejected as the fakes they clearly are. They can be read still today, and fragments of these heretical “gospels” turn up at times, like the so called “gospel of judas” recently. They are nonsense, and rightly rejected by people who seek the “ring of truth”, which is what we find in the Four proven Gospels before us.

2. All were written under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit. (**2 Timothy 3:16**), but each writer saw things from a different perspective, and therefore have variations in the things they wrote about.

3. All the Gospels are compatible but the emphasis of the writers is on different characteristics of Jesus Christ.

- | | | |
|------------|------------------------|-----------------------|
| a) Matthew | Christ the King | Written to the Jews |
| b) Mark | Christ the Servant | Written to the Romans |
| c) Luke | Christ the Perfect Man | Written to the Greeks |
| d) John | Christ the Son of God | Written to everybody |

4. The Gospels have equivalents in the four wing creatures in (**Revelation 4:7**) - the living creatures. (cf. **Ezekiel 1:10**)

- | | | |
|------------|---------|------------------|
| a) Matthew | King | Head of a Lion |
| b) Mark | Servant | Head of an Ox |
| c) Luke | Man | Head of a Man |
| d) John | God | Head of an Eagle |

5. The Gospels have equivalents in the four colours of the material of the entrance into the tabernacle. (**Exodus 26:36**)

- | | | |
|------------|---------|----------------------|
| a) Matthew | King | Purple of Royalty |
| b) Mark | Servant | Scarlet of Sacrifice |
| c) Luke | Man | White of Purity |
| d) John | God | Blue of Deity |

e) It should be noted that the colours of the robe of the ephod of the High Priest were purple, scarlet, white and blue.

6. The Gospels have equivalents in the Branch.

- | | |
|------------|--|
| a) Matthew | Branch of David (Isaiah 11:1, Jeremiah 23:5, 33:15) |
| b) Mark | Servant the Branch (Zechariah 3:8) |
| c) Luke | Man whose name is the branch (Zechariah 6:12,13) |
| d) John | Branch of Jehovah (Isaiah 4:2) |

Here we are calmly moving down towards the Cross. This is the evening before the Cross, maybe close to midnight. Every moment here is packed with doctrine. The Lord is powering out things that are going to be needed by the disciples in the days to come, and much that they hear they don't understand until after the Resurrection, and then only after He has taught them again.

In chapter **John 13:36-38** Peter's words were no idle boast. Peter is depending on his physical strength here and his sense of honour to be able to perform what he promises. Peter is physically strong [he even has his sword] and yet spiritually way weaker than he feels emotionally at that point. He is going to be involved in a battle, which is of a spiritual nature rather than physical strength. He is going to fail because he is up against naked Satanic power, but he will attack the crowd of arresting soldiers with his sword! He has great physical courage, but it is the wrong sort at this point.

Physically people might be strong, emotionally fired up, and intellectually they might be brilliant, but if they are not depending on the Holy Spirit for spiritual power, that person will fail. The Lord gives a rebuke here, saying that spiritual strength is important, the physical is not. Man's failure does not however stop God's plan, and Peter's failure is not going to stop his service either.

Peter is concerned about this and in the first verses of chapter 14, he is told not to worry. All the disciples were worried when they heard these words.

The context of eternal life, and eternal rewards gives stability in time. In summary the Lord is in control, both of the "now" problems of our brief life, and forever. He says remember this when you see Me betrayed, and when you see Me dying on the Cross. I am still in control. This is the working out of My plan, the Father's plan is for your benefit and My glory.

The greatest battles in the Christian life are the battles in the mind rather than the battles with the people in the world. They are the battles against doubt and despair, and often about our own ideas about what might be right, and what God actually is leading us to do.

You may ask at times, is the Lord in control? **John Chapter 14** tells us that He is. When things were looking the darkest, the light can always be shining the brightest – we often just need to “turn the light on”, and let the Word be the light to our path that we need. **Psalms 119:105-107, 111-112, 116-117**. At the time everything looked lost there was the gaining of our salvation and our eternal position as the member of the Royal Family of God forever. **1 Peter 1:18-19, 2:7-11**.

For three days these people are going to be in the darkest despair, they are going to doubt and fear, but He has given them doctrine in advance to keep them safe.

In this passage an understanding of the Jewish Wedding practices also assists where the groom goes away to build a home for his future bride, while the bride prepares beautiful objects for her wedding gown and home [see Doctrines at the end of this section for details]

146 A - THE PROMISED RETURN OF CHRIST - JOHN 14:1-4

1. Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. 2. In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. 3. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also.

KEY WORDS

Let not	Me	No, not
Heart	Kardia	Heart
Troubled	Tarasso	Agitated, Troubled [Present Passive Imperative]
Believe	Pisteuo	Believe [Present Active Indicative]
God	Theos	God
Believe	Pisteuo	Believe [Present Active Indicative]
Father	Pater	Father
House	Oikia	Home, House

Are	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Many	Polus	Many
Mansions	Mone	Mansion, Residences
Were not so	Eide me	If not so
Told	Epo	Tell [Aorist Active Indicative]
Go	Poreuomai	Go, Travel [Present Middle Indicative]
Prepare	Hetoaimazo	Prepare [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Place	Topos	Location, Place
Go	Poreuomai	Go, Travel [Aorist Passive Subjunctive]
Prepare	Hetoaimazo	Prepare [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Come	Erchomai	Come [Present Middle Indicative]
Again	Palin	Again, Anew
Receive	Paralambano	Receive [Future Middle Indicative]
I am	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
May be	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Subjunctive]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS – None found

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

Verse 1. Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. 2. In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. 3. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also.

In verse 1 we have the Greek word "Tarasso" in the present passive imperative. It means to be troubled by a deep anxiety or doubt. The present tense means you keep on doing it, passive voice means that you receive it, imperative mood means a command. Literally it can be translated, "do not keep on receiving doubts or worry".

Worry is not some thing that you do, it is something that hits you as your primal brain (Amygdala+) picks up any threat messages. You are told not to receive any threat message and worry about it, rather to challenge it by relaxing into the arms of the Lord in prayerfulness. You are not to receive worries and sit on them, rather you are to accept the promises of God by faith and give your worries over to the Lord.

It is not sinful to be anxious and depressed if there is a reason for it, but it is sinful to stay passive rather than being actively involved in moving on for/with the Lord. The pastoral challenge is to inspire your own heart and others, so they see beyond their feelings, and primal reactions, to the path the Lord wants them to walk, in sadness or pleasure, with His joy in the midst of the troubles that may come.

The Dean Dr McEwan has worked with many believers who were depressed and flat emotionally because of the things they had faced in life, but they kept on serving the Lord, and the start to dealing with anxiety and depression is worship. **Isaiah 61:3**. This is the victory for many; to rejoice in the Lord in the place of sadness. **Philippians 3:13-14, 4:4**.

Hebrews 12:12-15, says to strengthen the feeble knees, and lift the hands that hang down. This says that we are to combat depression, as we get overwhelmed by it, confessing our sins, feeding on the Word of God, worshipping, and getting on with our life of service. The Primal Brain is best fought by relaxation strategies, and so what modern psychology suggests today, is what the Bible said 2000 years ago.

If you are troubled, Jesus says, believe me, trust me, speak to me about it in prayer, and cast your burdens on me. You should not let your emotions overwhelm you, let faith through prayerfulness win control over your emotion, and pull the plough the Lord has made for you, doing the work He has left you here to do. **Matthew 11:28-30, Luke 9:57-62**.

Verses which you should also claim daily are, **1 Peter 5:6-7**; do not tell others your problems, for they are just human beings with problems of their own, you should tell the Lord. Write your problems down on a piece of paper, give them to the Lord in passionate prayer, and then burn the paper and see the worries go.

Then get on with the work you should be doing. God has given us time and we must use it. Get your life organised. Your emotions are something that ought to be under control. It is thinking things through God's way that keeps us on the right track.

A lot of people say that they believe in God. The Lord said to believe in Him also. Many people are theists but that does not give a relationship with Him. Satan believes in God and he trembles, what do you do with what you believe? "If you are a believer, believe in me and obey me", says the Lord.

These men are going to see Him die on the Cross in some 10-15 hours time. They are going to be some 48 hours without sleep. The Lord is going to be arrested by about 2am and they are going to see the trials, they are going to see the Lord suffer and they are going to see Him bleed and die. These words are going to strengthen them and encourage them as they think on these things later.

With the present tense we have to "keep on believing" on Him; it is a life long process. The Lord says that He knows what He is doing. There is a reason for all this. However when they saw the cross they did not apply it, and with the exception of John appear to have fallen apart.

Many of them ran away and hid. While the Lord was in the tomb they were in absolute depression and despair. Did they stay in the rented upper room until Resurrection morning? They may have, as the Lord is able to find them all together within a day of the resurrection. It was the resurrection that changed them. However their temporary failure did not stop the plan of God, and it did not stop the Lord's plan for them as individuals. Failure is always "temporary failure", and it is always able to be recovered from, as we bow before the lord, and cast all our cares on Him again. **1 Peter 5:5-10**.

Even though they are going to fail, the Lord is going to use them. Because they are going to deal with their failures, the Lord is going to be able to use them. Within 50 days, at the Jewish Feast of Pentecost the church is going to start, and the man who failed most of all, is going to preach the first sermon to launch the Christian Church Age – be filled with hope as you read on in Acts, and listen to the mp3 studies on the website – for God is not stopped by our failure.

It does not matter how much you have failed, if you are still alive, the Lord has something for you. He gives them reasons for obedience and faith in Christ. Faith is never blind in Christ; it is always based on evidence and something that is secure. His words are always secure, and His Holy Word will always stabilize our hearts and minds. **2 Timothy 1:7**. They have had a theological message to sit with, "believe in God, believe also in me".

In verse 2 He says that there is a reason to trust the words. They can look back into the past with their experiences of Him in the past, and there is also a reason in the future as well, because of what God has got for them all in the future that many prophetic words refer to. The Lord has many mansions in heaven, and He is going to prepare a place for us all. When you think all is lost do not worry, do not panic, all is in control, both in time and eternity. Your eternal joy and blessedness is secure.

In my Father's house, "oikia", is a family home, God's family home. His home is bigger than the universe we see which He created. You will be dwelling in a place that existed before He made the things we see; the universe was created after the Father's home. If you have a concept of heaven that is a city somewhere it is a "too small" concept. These words indicate that God's provision is far larger than anything that our minds can conceive.

Mansions, "mone", can be translated abiding places, areas of occupancy. It is not only used for a house but a vast estate of hundreds of thousands of acres. In the context of heaven it is likely to relate to a vast area. I go to prepare a place for you, says the Lord.

Place, "topis", is an administrative district, a province, a region. It is a province in the empire, a large tract of land. It is an area with many cities and a large population. In the greatness of God's creation

God has vast real estate for us. What God has for us has not been fully comprehended yet. It is not the cosiness or smallness of God's provision but eternal security, vastness and glory of His provision in eternity that the Lord challenges us with here.

I go, "poreumai", means to travel or set a course. Within 12 hours He is going to the Cross. Jesus says that He has set a course, He knows the route He is following, and He is going to go this way to provide for us.

There is purpose and direction all the way through it. Within an hour the Lord is going to be in the Garden of Gethsemane. This plus the Trials, the Cross, the Death, the Burial, and the Resurrection, is all part of a journey that He has decided to take. It is in accordance with the Plan of God and it is for you, me, and the disciples.

Rewards and Blessings in the Roman World were in a system of civic crowns. The crowns were of oak, laurel, or olive leaves, or when official from City-States often the leaf was exchanged for a permanent metal crown of solid beaten silver or gold, and they were known as the "victor's crowns". The Greeks at the Olympics, Corinthian, or Magnesian Games won a green leafy crown, which over a period of time faded and decayed.

The crowns in the ancient world were also for feats of bravery or great deeds done for the empire. It is the system of crowns which the New Testament uses as the picture of the eternal rewards that God has for us as believers. Ivy, oak, laurel and grass were the ones used in the Roman Empire. The Top Roman Civic Crown was of laurel leaves, but they were also made of gold, in fact the leafy crown was replaced with a gold one when the "victor" returned to their city from their place of triumph. The leafy crown was left in the temple of the city God and the city council/state gave the golden crown to the person to wear permanently.

Gaius Julius Caesar, after his conquest of Gaul, was called "Emperor". With this title was given a golden civic crown, which he was able to wear everywhere he went at all civic occasions. With the crown went several million dollars as part of the crown. This was complemented by several hundred thousand acres of land, and all the people and slaves needed to run it.

When you read about the crowns He has for you, think of these Roman crowns. There are vast rewards for us in heaven for service in time, far greater than we have thought. When the Lord awards a crown to you at His judgement seat, **2 Corinthians 5:9-11**, it will mean great rewards and great glory forever. The glory of course will be back to Him, and it will show what God was able to do through you.

We have everlasting life. We will have perfect full fellowship through the Lord Jesus Christ with God. We all have a resurrection body in which to enjoy Him forever. Even a person who is saved one second before they die has got that, but on top of that you have got eternal rewards, beyond and above the blessings of just being in resurrection body with Christ in eternity. The Lord is going to go and die on the Cross within hours of this talk, He is going to return and be resurrected with the final fulfilment of these words being when the Lord returns for His church.

Many people have suffering, which allows that person to win the incorruptible "Crown of Glory". If you really serve the Lord you will suffer. When it happens you should thank the Lord for the opportunity. The crown of glory can only be won in suffering. If you have not suffered you are not mature, and the enemy clearly isn't interested in you. When you grow up in the Christian life you will receive pressure to test you, always controlled by the Lord, and this is what maturity is all about. Its about fighting for the Lord, in His power and on His Path for our life – faithfully walking that called path = "Crowns" (plural) as your eternal reward.

Our Christian life is not the matter of relaxing into deeper and deeper beds of thorn-less roses, for there will be more thorns in your life. If you face death under persecution it is a wonderful opportunity for winning the "Crown of Life". When the Christians died in the Roman games they would encourage one another that they were going to receive the reward of the martyrs crown while the lions were gnawing at them.

In one of the latter persecutions there were many Christians in the army, and in the Thunderbolt Division on the Bulgarian front there were many of their total number who were believers. At the order of the commander they were stripped and forced into an icy lake where many died of exposure. All they had to do was to burn a pinch of incense and say that Caesar was God and they would be restored to the army. The vast majority stayed in the icy waters and died of exposure. One pagan centurion seeing this tough attitude on the part of the martyrs believed himself in Jesus, and walked into the lake and affirmed his new faith to his death. This is the spiritual toughness that we are called to.

The Lord Jesus Christ says, "Trust me". We need to go out as a lion rather than a mouse. We are going out to serve Him. Everything is important if it leads to eternal rewards, and is not important if it leads away from them. You can lose your rewards, but you cannot lose your salvation for you are His Child forever - 1

Corinthians 3:11-15, 2 Timothy 2:12-13, 2 John 8, John 14:2,3 cf. 13:38. Remember, we are rewarded for what He is doing by the Holy Spirit through us. This is God's wonderful grace and love, even more displayed for/through us. We receive more blessings for all our time spent walking in the Holy Spirit's power rather than in our own strength! This is an amazing thing!

What are we going to do with our crowns? We are going to lay the crowns at His feet. In the ancient world the person with the crown, when he met the emperor, he would place the crown at his feet, and the emperor would then ask the person to pick it up and wear it again to the emperor's glory. **Revelation 4:4, 9-11.**

Such a thing will happen in heaven to those who have won the crowns for Christian service; for all eternity they will wear their crown as a testimony to the power and grace of God. The athlete goes for a crown that fades; we go for an incorruptible crown. We go for the golden civic crown of eternity. Crowns would appear to be the opportunity for even deeper more abundant worship forever.

The concept which is set out in these first three verses of this chapter is almost always poorly portrayed in literature. It is very important that you correctly evaluate and teach the Word in all its glory, not in the boring and pedestrian way many teach, and sadly live their Christian life. The doctrine of heaven is poorly taught and therefore is open to ridicule by those who should know better; we are to passionately teach these things.

In many churches people are given just enough information to think they know about Christianity and yet are sitting ducks for the cults. Most cults are told to go after those who have been to Sunday School, or have been in a church that doesn't teach the Word.

There is even a new form of Buddhism which is sweeping up people from the charismatic and liberal churches in the UK, and other places such as Singapore. They have the love feast, miracles, healings, speaking in tongues, and use Christian phrases, but they do not have the Cross, and they do not have The Saviour – it is deception. It is just the most recent in a long series of alternatives to the truth that Satan specializes in, and it will not be the last.

These groups are however very warm in their fellowship and loving and considerate, and thousands are being drawn to them because they out perform the Charismatics and liberal churches, and most of the people they target are ignorant of God's Word. People are hungry for emotion, love, and miracles, and they are able to find it in this cult and all others, without ever seeing and accepting their need for the real Saviour.

APPLICATION

Jesus Christ is the bridegroom of the Church, and has gone to prepare a place for His Bride the Church universal, and He will return for his people at the Rapture.

Do not stay living with your depression; rather get on with your life. It is going to sour your walk with the Lord if you stay depressed or anxious.

Depression can come upon Christians in a variety of ways. When you are depressed you cannot do other things, for you are introspective, whereas the Holy Spirit will lift you up with worship and get your focus back to Christ and "others".

Treating of depression is one of the major areas of ministry in the pastorate. If the Word of God has not been taught well you will find a high incidence of anxiety and depression in a local church.

Some will still fight a deep battle with depression and anxiety due to their sensitive natures, but the solution is the same; feed on the Word in the Holy Spirit's power and worship, work and witness your way to recovery.

Let us rejoice in this same reality; the Lord has not finished with us because of our failures. He forgives and restores and we may rejoice in our continued service. **Psalms 103:8-18.**

We need to live a Holy Spirit filled life, and do everything for his glory that we might win these crowns and so glorify him even more in time and forever.

If you have the truth you have to get the truth across. It is the truth of centring on the cross, the blood of Christ and the resurrection.

It is important that the Sunday School children get to know that the Lord Jesus Christ has come as their Saviour, and they will be open to it. Sunday School and Youth Ministry needs to teach the Word, not play around... We are to be ready, alert to the days we live in, and teach and mentor to the young, trust in Him.

DOCTRINES

JEWISH WEDDING

At the time of Christ the wedding was arranged by the father of the groom. In this analogy the relationship between Christ and mankind will be examined.

1. Prior to the first visit of the prospective groom to the bride, the father made arrangements for their relationship. **(Hebrews 2:13)**
 Analogy - God the Father - the Planner made arrangements for mankind in eternity past.
2. The prospective groom would then meet the bride and fellowship with her.
 Analogy - Christ came to earth at the first advent and spent time with man.
3. Prior to leaving the bride's house the bridegroom would pay the whole dowry or payment for the bride. **(Hebrews 9:23-28)**
 Analogy - Christ's death on the cross paid the debt of all mankind in full.
4. The bridegroom would return to his father's house and build a future house for the newly married couple to live in. **(John 14:1-3)**
 Analogy - Christ ascended to his father's house to prepare a place for his bride.
5. At the Father's request the Son would go to the Bride's home to pick the bride up.
 Analogy - Christ's return to earth for his church at the Rapture.
6. The bride as she left her home was married to the groom. **(1 Corinthians 15:51-58)**
 Analogy - As the body of Christ rises to meet Christ in the air the body becomes the bride.
7. The bride has been preparing her wedding garments waiting for the bridegroom. The bridegroom adorns his bride for the wedding supper. **(1 Corinthians 3:12-15)**
 Analogy - Whilst waiting for the return of Christ, the body produces gold, silver and precious stones. The final dressing of the body is done by Christ at the Judgement seat of Christ.
8. The bride and groom hold a wedding feast which in rich families could last a month.
 Analogy - The wedding feast of Christ will last 1,000 years - The Millennium on earth.
9. Friends of the bridegroom would attend the wedding feast.
 Analogy - Old Testament Saints in resurrection bodies will be in the rejoicing of the Millennium.
10. Friends of the bride waited outside the wedding hall, with lamps alight waiting for the bridal couple before they entered the wedding feast. **(Matthew 25:1-13)**
 Analogy - Tribulation Saints who survive the great tribulation will enter into the Millennium in their physical bodies to replenish the earth. Unbelievers will be cast off the earth as they are not invited to the marriage supper of the lamb.
11. The passage of scriptures from the first advent of Christ to the end of the Millennium is clearly seen in its analogy to the Jewish Wedding Ceremony.

RAPTURE

1. The Rapture of the Church is the termination of the Church Age and is the taking of all believers since Pentecost to Heaven by the Lord Jesus Christ.
2. General Scripture (**John 1 4:1-3, 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18**)
3. The Rapture and the 2nd Advent should not be confused, they are 7 years apart being separated by the Tribulation and have different characteristics.
4. Rapture
 - a) Not revealed in Old Testament.
 - b) Promises to the Church fulfilled.
 - c) Judgement seat of Christ rewards (**1 Corinthians 3:12-15, 2 Corinthians 5:10-11, 2 Timothy 2:11**)
 - d) Christ the Bridegroom and Head
 - e) Believers body changed (not creation) (**1 Corinthians 15:51-58, Philippians 3:21**)
 - f) Church goes to heaven. (**1 Thessalonians 4:17**)
 - g) Imminent - no signs to be fulfilled before the Church can be removed.
 - h) Time of comfort for believer. (**1 Thessalonians 4:18**)
 - i) Christ will meet the Church in the air. (**1 Thessalonians 4:13-18**)
 - j) Private (only believers will see)
 - k) Before tribulation
 - l) Believers go out of the world. (**1 Thessalonians 4:16-18**)
 - m) Removal of the Holy Spirit. (**2 Thessalonians 2:7**)
5. Second Advent
 - a) Spoken of by all major Old Testament prophets. (**Zechariah 14:4**)
 - b) Promises to Israel fulfilled.
 - c) Great White Throne Judgement (after Millennium) - unbelievers. (**Matthew 25:31, Revelation 20:12-15**).
 - d) Christ the Messiah to Israel (**Daniel 9:25**)
 - e) Radical changes in nature. (**Romans 8:19-22**)
 - f) Church comes back to earth (**1 Thessalonians 3:13 4:17**)
 - g) Many details of prophecy yet to be fulfilled. (Revelation Chapters 6-19)
 - h) Time of terror for unbeliever. (**Revelation 6:15-17**)
 - i) Christ will come back to earth (**Zechariah 14:4**)
 - j) Public - every eye shall see him (**Revelation 1- 7**)
 - k) After tribulation.
 - l) Unbelievers taken off the earth (**Matthew 24:37-42**)
 - m) Removal of Satan (**Revelation 20:1-3**)
6. The Rapture is before the Tribulation. Thus the Pre Tribulation Rapture position is shown by nine factors.
 - a) The worried Thessalonians (**2 Thessalonians 2:1-6**)
 - b) The Restrainer removed (**2 Thessalonians 2:7-12**)
 - c) The lack of the word 'Church' in (**Revelation 13:9**)
 - d) The verb Tereo in (**Revelation 3:10**)
 - e) Grace before judgement (**John 14:3**)
 - f) Resurrections in their order. (**1 Corinthians 15:22-26**)
 - g) The Covenant approach. The Abrahamic, Davidic and Palestinian covenant fulfilled at 2nd Advent.
 - h) The Church is in heaven before the Seal Judgements (**Revelation 4, 5**)
 - i) The contrast between the 2nd Advent and the Rapture

RAPTURE - PRE-TRIBULATION RAPTURE:

(Why the Church will not go through the Tribulation)

1. On the basis of the distinction between Israel and the Church:
 - a) God never deals with Israel and the Church at the same time.

- b) Because of the promises to Israel, yet unfulfilled, Israel must have a future. Evangelistic and missionary responsibility of Israel will be completed in the Tribulation.
- c) The nation Israel has not been completed.
- d) "Daniel's 70 weeks" not completed. (**Jeremiah 25:11, 12, 29:10, Daniel 9:2, 24, 25**)

2. Statement and Structure of Revelation:

- a) The statement (**Revelation 3:10**) "Tereo ek" (to keep out), not "Aireo" (to take out) used in context.
- b) The structure: Church Age/Tribulation/Millennium/Eternity. (**Revelation 2-3, 7-19, 20, 21:1-8**)

3. The Statement of Thessalonians:

- a) Removal of the restraining presence of the Holy Spirit is impossible without removing the Church at the same time. **2 Thessalonians 2:6, 7.**
- b) In **2 Thessalonians 2:2** the incorrect translation in the A.V. confuses the entire passage. "Day of Christ" should read "Day of the Lord". (False teachers came with a forged letter supposedly from Paul which implied that the Day of the Lord, or the Tribulation, had already come).
- c) In **1 Thessalonians 4:16-18** the phrase "in Christ" refers to believers in the Church Age. Verse 18 emphasises a comfort which could not exist if the Church went through the Tribulation.

4. Remnant of the Tribulation:

- a) Christ returns to the earth with His saints. (**1 Thessalonians 3-13, Jude 1 4**).
- b) Jesus at the same time delivers saints at the Second Advent. (**Zechariah 14:1-5**)
- c) Christ cannot come with saints and deliver saints unless there are two groups of saints - Church and Tribulation. Obviously, both groups exist and both groups of saints are separated.

5. Grace before Judgment: God gives grace before judging.

- a) Warning - Noah was rescued by heeding God's warning.
- b) Rescue - Lot was rescued by God.

6. Imminence of the Rapture:

- a) No prophecy of Scripture has to be fulfilled before the Rapture can take place. (**1 Corinthians 1:7, Colossians 3:4, 2 Thessalonians 2:1, Titus 2:13**)
- b) Hence, the Rapture can take place at any time.
- c) Not so the Second Advent: much prophecy must be fulfilled before Second Advent.

7. Nature of the Tribulation:

- a) Purpose of the Tribulation: to bring judgment on a Christ-rejecting world. God demonstrates that man cannot provide a perfect environment when Satan has full control and restraining ministry of the Holy Spirit is removed.
- b) God completes His dealings with Israel, which allows the Jews to fulfil their missionary ministry begun after the Babylonian Captivity.
- c) God prepares Israel for the fulfilment of the Unconditional Covenants by the return of Christ during Israel's darkest hour and the low point of human history (Tribulation).

8. Activity of the Church in Heaven (**Revelation 4,5**)

- a) Before the Church returns to the earth with Christ, they must appear before the Judgment Seat of Christ for evaluation of production in the Christian walk - rewards. (**2 Corinthians 5:10, 1 Corinthians 3:11-15**)
- b) Hence, some interval is necessary (7 years) before the Bride of the Lamb can be prepared.
- c) The marriage of the Lamb takes place in heaven. (**Revelation 19:6-8**) after which the Bride returns to the earth with the Groom. (**Revelation 19:14**). The wedding feast is held on earth. (**Revelation 19:9**)

WORRY

1. General scripture for the cure to worry (**Genesis 15**).

2. Scriptures where the believer is told not to worry: (**Philippians 4:6; Psalm 55:22; 1 Peter 5:7; 1 Samuel 17:47; Exodus 14:13, 14**).

3. We are instructed to be imitators of God - God never worries (Ephesians 5:1) When we worry we do not imitate God.

4. Three categories of worry:

- a) Worry about problems of this life.
- b) Worry about death and dying.
- c) Worry about sin (guilt).

5. The example given is of Abram in **Genesis 15**.

6. First cure for worry - The Promises of God (v 1-7).

- a) God tells Abram not to worry (v 1) -
- b) "I am thy shield and thy exceeding reward.
- c) The promise of a natural child is given (v 4).
- d) The promises of God are backed by the perfect character of God
- e) God provides an object lesson - the stars (v 5).
- f) God reminds him of his salvation - a grace gift (v 6).
- g) God reminds Abram of God's faithfulness in the past (v 7).
- h) The challenge to Abram: trust in God or worry.

7. Second cure for worry - The Doctrine of the Word (v 8-12).

a) God instructs Abram to sacrifice five animals (v 9)

b) Animals sacrificed are:

- i) HEIFER - representing CONFESSION OF SINS
- ii) SHE GOAT representing SALVATION RECONCILIATION
- iii) RAM representing SALVATION PROPITIATION
- iv) TURTLE DOVE representing CHRIST'S DEITY
- v) PIGEON representing CHRIST'S RESURRECTED HUMANITY.

c) Application to the cure of worry:

i) HEIFER - by confessing your sins they are blotted out. Do not worry about past failures. Confession of sins is essential before you can apply the doctrines of the Bible to cure your worry.

ii) SHE GOAT - God provided reconciliation through Christ by removing the barrier between God and man - we are reconciled therefore do not worry.

iii) RAM - God was satisfied by Christ's sacrifice. Jesus Christ can handle our problems in time do not worry.

iv) TURTLE DOVE - Jesus Christ as God is always faithful, He is always with us - do not worry.

v) PIGEON - The resurrected Jesus Christ is seated in the place of commendation at the right hand of God in a most powerful location - do not worry.

d) Satan counter-attacks in the form of birds swooping down on the carcasses, doubts form and there is a temptation to worry (v 11).

e) Abram drives them away - he refuses to worry (v 11)

f) Under pressure, Abram begins to doubt and worry about his descendants (v 12).

8. Third cure for worry - Knowledge of prophecy

a) In our future as believers we will have:

- i) A resurrection body (**1 Corinthians 15:51-54; 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18**).
- ii) A mansion in heaven (**John 14:1-3**)
- iii) An inheritance (**1 Peter 1:3-8**)
- iv) Blessedness and no pressure (**Revelation 21:4**)

b) God gave Abram five prophecies in (**Genesis 15**):

- i) The Jews would serve the Egyptians 400 years (v 13).

- ii) God would judge Egypt with ten plagues (v 14).
- iii) The Jews would leave with great wealth (v 14).
- iv) Abram would die at a ripe old age (v 15).
- v) The Jews would return to the Promised Land (v 16).

c) Abram therefore was assured that his descendants would have a great future and to seal this, God, that same day gave Abram the Palestinian Covenant (v 18 -21).

9. It is of interest that the number of promises inferred were five, the animals killed were five and the prophecies given were five, the number five being that of GRACE, God's unmerited favour to man.

CHRISTIAN LIFE – REWARDS AND CROWNS

1. Rewards and Salvation are carefully separated in the scriptures. Salvation is a free gift from God, rewards are for meritorious service in the power of the Spirit.

2. Salvation - a free gift to the lost. (**Ephesians 2:8-9, Romans 6:23, John 4:10**) - an everlasting possession. (**John 3:36, John 5:24, John 6:47**)

3. Rewards - to the saved who faithfully work for the Lord. (**1 Corinthians 9:24, 25, Revelation 22:12**) - distributed at the Judgement Seat of Christ. (**1 Corinthians 3:11-15, 2 Corinthians 5:10, Romans 14:10**)

4. Rewards as Crowns:-

- a) The incorruptible crown - for faithfulness in exercising self control. (**1 Corinthians 9:24-27**)
- b) The crown of glory - for faithfulness in suffering. (**1 Peter 5:4**)
- c) The crown of life - for faithfulness under trial. (**James 1:12, Revelation 2:10**)
- d) The crown of righteousness - for faithful testimony. (**2 Timothy 4:8**)
- e) The crown of rejoicing - for faithful service. (**1 Thessalonians 2:19, 20, Philippians 4:1**)

RESURRECTION

1. The resurrection of Christ is central to the gospel. (**1 Corinthians 15:3-4**)

- a) Had there been no resurrection then we would all still be in our sins. (**1 Corinthians 15:17**).
- b) Resurrection indicates completion of justification. (**Romans 4:25, 2 Corinthians 5:21**)
- c) Resurrection is a guarantee of ultimate sanctification. (**1 Corinthians 15:20-23**)
- d) The resurrection is the Father's seal on Christ's completed work, and the public declaration of its acceptance.
- e) Without the resurrection it is impossible for Christ to be glorified. The humanity of Christ is glorified higher than the angels. (**John 7:39, John 16:14**)

2. Historical proof of the resurrection:

- a) The empty tomb. (**Matthew 28**)
- b) Many of witnesses died rather than change their testimony.
- c) Subsequent changes and confidence of the disciples after the resurrection.
- d) The day of Pentecost. The reality of the resurrection was so well known that when Peter preached the first two sermons in Jerusalem over 8000 people were saved. (**Acts 2:41, Acts 4:3-4**)
- e) The observance of the first day of the week as the worship day. (**Acts 20:7, 1 Corinthians 16:2, Revelation 1:10**)
- f) The historic existence of the church. The church worships a literal risen Saviour, and not merely the memory of a dead martyr. (**Romans 5:12, 14, 17, 6:3-9, 8:2, 1 Corinthians 15:26,54-55, Hebrews 2:14**)

3. Baptism is a sign of the new resurrection life. (**Romans 6:3-11, Colossians 2:12**).

4. The Lord's Supper is a reminder of the expected return of the risen Lord. (**1 Corinthians 11:23-26**)

5. Order of the resurrections:-

- a) The first for believers only including Jesus Christ which is divided into four parts.
 - i) The resurrection of Christ. (**1 Corinthians 15:23, Romans 1:4, 1 Thessalonians 1:10, 1 Peter 1:3**)
 - ii) The Rapture of the church (**1 Corinthians 15:51-57, 1 Thessalonians 4:16-18**)

iii) The Old Testament saints and tribulation martyrs at the end of the Tribulation. (**Daniel 12:13, Isaiah 26-19-20, Revelation 20:4**)

iv) The Millennial saints and those who survive the Tribulation to enter the Millennium in their physical bodies.

b) The second resurrection occurs at the end of the Millennium and is for unbelievers only. They are judged and cast into the lake of fire forever. (**1 John 5:28, 29, Revelation 20:12-15, 2 Peter 3:7, Matthew 25:41**)

c) Jesus, who must be the first eternally resurrected human, was not raised until three days after the crucifixion.

d) People in the Old Testament who were "raised from the dead" were merely resuscitated, and later died.

e) **Matthew 27:52-53** is a transfer scene not a resurrection scene. The transfer is one of saints from paradise to the third heaven (**Ephesians 4:8**). Some were given resuscitated bodies to witness to the Jews.

6. The sequence of events at the Lord's resurrection is as follows:-

a) Mary Magdalene, Salome and Mary the mother of James and Joses head towards the tomb followed by other women carrying embalming spices.

b) The three find the stone rolled away. Mary Magdalene goes back to tell the disciples. (**Luke 23:55-24:9, John 20:1-2**)

c) Mary the mother of James and Joses draws near to the tomb and sees the angel. (**Matthew 28:2**)

d) She goes back to the women carrying the spices.

e) Peter and John who have been advised by Mary Magdalene arrive, look inside the empty tomb and go away. (**John 20:3-10**)

f) Mary Magdalene returns weeping, sees two angels and then Jesus. (**John 20:11-18**)

g) As instructed by the Lord she goes to tell the disciples.

h) Mary the mother of James and Joses meets the women with the spices and returning with them they see the two angels. (**Luke 24:4-5, Mark 16:5**)

i) They also receive advice from the angels and, going to seek the disciples, are met by Jesus. (**Matthew 28:8-10**)

7. Recorded appearances after his resurrection.

a) Mary Magdalene (**John 20:14-18**)

b) Women returning from the tomb (**Matthew 28:8-10**)

c) Emmaus couple (**Luke 24:13-31**)

d) Peter (**Luke 24:34**)

e) Ten disciples (**Luke 24:36-43**)

f) Disciples including Thomas (**John 20:24-29**)

g) Lake Tiberias appearance (**John 21:1-23**)

h) To the 500 (**1 Corinthians 15:6**)

i) James (**1 Corinthians 15:7**)

j) Disciples at the ascension (**Acts 1:3-12**)

k) Stephen (**Acts 7:55**)

l) Paul on Damascus Road (**Acts 9:3-6**)

m) Paul in the Temple (**Acts 22:17-21**)

n) Paul at night (**Acts 23:11**)

o) John on Patmos (**Revelation 1:10-19**)

CHRIST: RESURRECTION BODY

The resurrection body of Jesus Christ -

1. Retained the nail prints in the hands and feet. (**Psalms 22:16, Zechariah 12:10, John 20:25-29**)

2. Retained the wound scar in the side. (**John 20:25-29**)

3. Christ was recognised on 15 appearances by his disciples as the one who died and rose again.

4. Resurrection body of Christ could eat. (**Luke 24:42-43**)

5. It had substance; it could be touched and felt. (**Matthew 28:9, Luke 24:39, John 20:17**)

6. His body could breathe. (**John 20:22**)

7. His body possessed flesh and bones. (Luke 24:39-40)
8. Could walk through closed doors. (Luke 24:36, John 20:19)
9. Appears and disappears suddenly. (Luke 24:31, 36)
- 10 Could move vertically or horizontally. (Acts 1:9, 10)
- 11 Our body will be just like His without the nail prints or wound in the side.

HARMONY

THE PROMISED RETURN OF CHRIST

Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also.

146 B – CHRIST ANSWERS THOMAS - JOHN 14:4-7

John 14:4 And whither I go **ye know**, and the way ye know. **5** Thomas saith unto him, Lord, **we know not** whither thou goest; and how can **we know** the way? **6** Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. **7** If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth **ye know him**, and **have seen him**.

KEY WORDS

Whither	Hopou	In what place, Where
Go	Hupago	Withdraw, Depart [Present Active Indicative]
Know	Eido	Perceive, Understand [Perfect Active Indicative]
Way	Hodos	Means, Way, Journey
Know	Eido	Perceive, Understand
Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Lord	Kurios	God, Lord, Master
Know	Eido	Perceive, Understand [Perfect Active Indicative]
Whither	Pou	Where
Goest	Hupago	Withdraw, Depart [Present Active Indicative]
Can	Dunamai	Have power [Present Middle Indicative]
Know	Eido	Perceive, Understand [Perfect Active Infinitive]
Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Am	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Middle Indicative]
Truth	Aletheia	Truth
Life	Zoe	Life
No man	Oudeis	No one
Cometh	Erchomai	Come [Present Middle Indicative]
But	Ei me	If not
By	Kai	Through
Me	Emou	Me
Known	Ginosko	Know [Perfect Active Indicative]
Should have known	Ginosko	Know [Future Middle Indicative]
Father	Pater	Father
Henceforth	Arti	Just now, This day
Know	Ginosko	Know [Present Active Indicative]
Have seen	Horao	Perceive, Behold [Perfect Active Indicative]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS

GINOSKO – TO KNOW – Occurs 222 times in the New Testament of which 18 times are in the Perfect Tense. Again John predominate the Perfect Tense using this form 7 times each in the Gospel and Letters. The remaining uses are by Paul in his letters to the Corinthians. With one exception it is in the Active Voice and with the exception of two in the Indicative Mood. In the Gospel of John Jesus said He knew that the religious leaders did not have the love of God John 5:42 and they say that Jesus has a demon John 8:52, however the Lord Jesus Christ confirms to them that He knows God John 8:55

HORAO – TO SEE – Occurs 115 times in the New Testament with 31 times in the Perfect Tense. It is one of 10 Greek verbs translated “to see” and with “Blepo” means to physically see. John the Apostle dominates the use of “Horao” with 25 of the occasions in his Gospel and Letters. Horao is wholly in the Active Voice and in the Indicative Mood in all but two cases. In **John 14:7** Jesus talks about the Holy Spirit who they cannot See and follows two times in **John 14:9** that soon the world will not See Him but the disciples will See Him.

OIDA, EIDO – TO KNOW – Occurs 251 times in the Perfect Tense in the New Testament and is by far the largest with Grapho next at 96 occurrences. Because of the mixture of “knows” and “don’t knows” and different characters ranging from the Trinity, through the Disciples of Christ, Religious Leaders, and even to demons the review of this verb is given in each verse it occurs.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED AT THE FIRST COMING OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

ITEM	OLD TESTAMENT	DESCRIPTION	FULFILMENT
146B	Zechariah 11:10-11b	The Messiah would be God	John 14:7

REFLECTION

In verses 4 - 7 Thomas opens his mouth and puts both feet in it. He is honest and is prepared even to look foolish to enable himself to understand what the Lord is saying. If you do not understand something you must ask questions – let us be like Thomas – ready to look foolish – but ready to learn truth always.

4. And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know. 5. Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way? 6. Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. 7. If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

Verse 4. Here the word "know" comes up, and note the number of perfect tenses in this short section – John is making the point strongly – to “know” the truth is to have glory that lasts forever, and to see the truth has results in it that go forever. The implication here is that the Lord is saying, "You fellows should know all these things and understand them – this should have transformed your thinking already". He is talking about the Cross and the Resurrection, and that He is going to die for their sins, and that He is going to come back and rule one day, but that it is a long way away and not in their thinking at present.

They have been three years with him and yet still do not know what He is saying at this point. John is very honest. He makes it very clear that the Lord challenged them on these things and he says, we did not know them at that time. Do we know these things? We need to know the Lord’s person and work thoroughly, and we need to know the work that is yet to be done – we cannot enjoy our walk without this, nor can we intelligently lift our glass at Communion and say, “until He comes”.

"Hopou" is the word translated "where". It is a state, not just a place where He is going, and we will go. It is a change of state, Jesus says that He is going to change His whole manner of life; He is going to glory. He says that He is going to the Cross, and open up everything that is going to open up for me and for you.

This is not something they have in mind, it is something very big "hupago". The Lord indicates here that He is departing to a destination, a state of being and a place that is beyond their thoughts at that point. He is in control. He is going to another dimension and is in charge of the whole process. Will they grow in the grace and the knowledge of the Saviour, or will they not? **2 Peter 3:18.**

Sadly many churches today will not even teach about the Lord's Second Advent, because they argue, "it will cause division", and it may! We have no right at all to restrict the Lord's words to us, and only teach what we foolishly think is "safe". The whole word for the whole world! We must risk the enemy's attack, and we must risk some going away from us, because they want the church to remain a crèche for babies! Will we go on with Jesus all the way, or "pull back to perdition"? **Hebrews 10:35- 11:3**.

It is in the present active indicative, indicating absolute certainty. This is in contrast with the perfect, active, indicative of "oida", the verb, to know, used of the disciples, who don't know! Most believers today "don't know" these truths, and sadly most don't want to know them, but to serve the Lord in power we must know these truths and live in them. Many churches wonder why they don't have a real witness to their local needy community, but the robust pagans around them don't want to join a baby-sitting group, nor an elderly crèche – they want the truth to set them free, not baby truths to tranquilize them.

Here he says that they should have known where he was going. From their time with him they should have picked up truths to help them understand these things. Because of His teaching, they should know this, if they had been listening.... He said that they had learnt in the past, with results that go on for ever. The sad thing is that they haven't learned these things as they should have, and so it is their ignorance that is "going on and on" at present. Good news, they will be changed by the resurrection.

The "way" you know - "hodos" the path. The Lord is saying that He is following a path, which is in accordance with God's Eternal Plan. The path is going to lead to the Cross, which is one step on the path to the Crown; it is not the end, it is the open door to a new beginning for all who come to Him ever afterwards.

The people wanted a short cut, which will go straight to the crown. They thought that the Lord was going to set up His kingdom in the next day or so. They had expected it on Palm Sunday. "Perhaps it will be at the Passover now", they thought. However He is not going to seize the Crown from the Herods or the Romans. He is going to die, and through that win the Eternal Victor's Crown over sin and death.

In verse 5, Thomas uses the perfect tense again. We do not know in the past, with the result that we still do not know.... They are thinking in physical terms. "Perhaps He is going back to the Galilee", they think.

Thomas says how can they know the way, how can they get the capacity? He asks the Lord to give them the capacity to know these things. The word translated "can" is "dunamis". How do we get the power (dynamite) to know God's Word? The answer - By the Holy Spirit!

Verse 6 starts with the statement "I am", "ego eimi". This shows that the Lord is again claiming to be God – and so to re-orient them to the truth about who He really is, and what He is about to do as God-Man. When any Jew said this, he was either to be stoned to death or worshipped, as it was the equivalent of the Tetragrammaton, JHWH. He is saying that He and the Father are one. They did not understand fully, but they did understand what it meant.

"Oudeis", there are no exceptions to the rule. No one can have spiritual life unless they have it through Christ. "Pros" plus the accusative of "kata". Pros means face to face. This means that no one has a relationship with the Father unless it is through ("Face to face with") the Son. This says dogmatically that no religion of any sort whatsoever is correct. The only way to God is through historical Biblical Christianity – through a living, Holy Spirit mediated relationship with Jesus alone.

It is only through Christ that there is a true and working knowledge of the Father. **Acts 4:12, 16:31**, we have words like, "must be saved". He saves only "His way", not by any other gimmick or system. He knows that the Cross is the way, the only means whereby it will be won, and there is certainty here – it will be won.

As only God knows this, the statement by the Lord again, speaks of His deity. In the cultic "new world translation "bible", they have to mix this verse up otherwise they will see that Christ is God, and every falsely translated "bible" has to mess these verses up, as they mess up the first and third chapters of John also.

In verse 7 the word "If" is a second class if, meaning, "and as such, it is not true". If you had known me, says the Lord, which you have not really, you would have known my Father. You have not seen the truth about me so far but from now on you will says the Lord.

God says that not all things are simple and the disciple with the Lord for three years did not understand most of what they had seen or heard, and none of them could blame the teacher! All of them are going to fall apart and run for the hills when the Cross occurs, and only John and the women stand firm.

Good news - Jesus says that their failure is not the end. They will change from ignorance to knowledge as they start to apply things they have heard in the light of the Cross, but it will be after the Resurrection, when they hear the Lord teach them again. In four days time their despair will be turned into joy.

Within 50 days, on the Day of Pentecost, they were talking and praying about everything that the Lord has been saying.

APPLICATION

How long have we heard God's Word, and how much do we understand and are applying in our life?

Doctrine should have a permanent effect in your life, and will, if applied, continue having positive impact into eternity.

You can be active in the Christian life only by seeing, accepting, and understanding, and applying the purpose, power and working of God's plan in Christ, and asking what God requires of you in response.

There is no understanding of spiritual things without a personal relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ and the teaching of the Holy Spirit.

We should be encouraged by the failure of the disciples to understand everything.

If you go through the Bible verse by verse you will come up against passages which are hard to understand.

If we have difficulty we should relax, trust the Lord, keep dealing with sin in our life, but keep depending on Him, reading the Word, praying and depending on the Holy Spirit to move us forward.

If you want to see God clearly, look at Christ. If you see what He did you will see the Character of God.

DOCTRINES

CHRIST:- HUMILIATION AND EXALTATION – THE ROAD TO GLORY

1. The Lords Jesus Christ in Exaltation - **Hebrews 8:1** *"Now of the things which we have spoken this is the sum: We have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens;"*

2. The Road to Glory - **Philippians 2:5-11**

3 "Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus" [v 5]

[a] "let this mind be in you - (Present. Active. Imperative) have this attitude. To think objectively, noble thinking of divine viewpoint based on thinking the mind of Christ. **1 Corinthians 2:16** compared to **2 Corinthians 10:4-5**

[b] "in yourselves" - among believers Vs. 4 "look" - (Present. Active. Participle] consider, focus Basis of 4 Laws of the Christian Way of Life.

4. "Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God" [v 6]:

[a] "form of God" - Inner Character. Divine Essence- in his pre-incarnate state.

[b] "being" - (Present. Active. Participle.) Eternal existence. **Revelation 1:8 John 1:1 Colossians 2:16**

[c]"robbery" - "to be grasped" - (Present. Active. Infinitive.)

[i] Used for act of robbery

[ii] Used of a thing robbed

[iii] A prize or thing to be grasped; be won but something to clutch hold of strongly,

5. "But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men" [v 7]

[a] His incarnation: not something to hold. No reputation - "emptied" - (Aorist. Active. Indicative.) To lay aside privileges, deprive oneself of normal function:

[i] Not loss of deity

[ii] Not loss of divine attributes

[iii] Rather, a choosing not to exercise His essence so as to become "like us:" **Hebrews 2:14,17**

[b] being the form" - (Aorist. Active. Participle.) human essence - body, soul, spirit no Old Sin Nature

[c] "being made" (Aorist. Middle. Participle.) Having become. Precedes "humbled"

[d] "likeness of men" - of same condition, nature and ability.

6. "And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross." [v 8]

[a] His Humiliation: - "being found" - (Aorist. Passive. Participle) being recognised, discovered.

[b] "in appearance" - In contrast to all that He was, what He appeared outwardly to others.

[c] "He humbled Himself" - (Aorist Active Indicative.) Mental attitude of grace from birth to death. True humility Romans 12:3

[d] "becoming obedient" - (Aorist. Middle Participle.) to hear & obey.

[e] "to the point of death" - Spiritual death. Christ learned obedience through suffering (**Hebrews 5:8**) maximum self-discipline.

[f] His Humiliation: - "death on a cross" - Most disgraceful form of death. Reserved for hardened criminals and runaway slaves.

7. "Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name":[v 9]

[a] His Exaltation: -"therefore" - because of His humiliation "highly exalted" - (Aorist . Active. Indicative.) To raise above and beyond.

[b] Christ shared God's glory in Eternity Past, but this is the exaltation of His humanity. Compare **Ephesians 1:20-23**

[c] "bestowed" - (Aorist. Middle. Indicative.) Freely bestowed, as Christ gave Himself freely.

[d] "name" - The rank, office, dignity. The name, **Hebrews 1:4-8**

8. "That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth"; [v 10]

Celebrityship - Recognised/Universal Acknowledgment: "at the name" - In sphere of His exalted position

[i] Those in heaven - angelic

[ii] On earth - human

[iii] Under earth - dead unbelievers and imprisoned demons.

9. "And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father" [v 11].

[a] "every tongue confess" - (Aorist. Middle. Subjunctive.) Openly acknowledge volitionally - self condemned

[b] "Jesus Christ is Lord" - Deity

[c] "to glory of God"

APPLICATION

1. True humility is the way to greatness. **Luke 22:24-27** grace-oriented thinking. **Romans 12:3**

2. The way to lead with authority is to follow with submission. **Luke 7:1-10**

3. True understanding of authority demands that one serve - not be served. **1 Corinthians 9:1-18** The Law of Supreme Sacrifice and the Christian Medal of Honour.

4. Application to the Pastor. **1-Peter 5:1- 4**

GOD: PLAN OF GOD

1. In eternity past, God designed a plan for every believer, which takes into account every event and decision in human history.

2. The plan centres around the person of Jesus Christ. (**1 John 3:23, Ephesians 1:4-6**)

3. Entrance into the plan is based on the principle of grace. (**Ephesians 2:8, 9**) where the sovereignty of God and the free will of Man meet at the cross. God brings salvation which is complete, Man brings his faith.
4. God's plan was so designed so as to include all events and actions. (**1 Peter 1:2**)
5. Under his plan God has decreed to do some things directly and some through agencies, Israel, the Church.
6. Without interfering with human free will in any way God has designed a plan so perfect that it includes cause and effect, as well as provision, preservation and function.
7. There are many functions in the Plan of God. They all constitute one whole comprehensive plan which is perfect, eternal and unchangeable.
8. The plan of God is consistent with human freedom and does not limit or coerce human free will. Distinction should be made between what God causes and what God permits. God causes the Cross but permits sin. God is neither the author of sin nor sponsors sin.
9. His plan portrays that man has free will. God never condones sin in the human race. Man started in perfect environment and innocence. Man sinned of his own free will. Man will sin in the perfect environment of the Millennium.
10. Distinction should be made between the divine plans which are related to the plan of God and divine laws which regulate human conduct on the earth. Divine laws occur in time, divine plans occur in eternity.
11. God's plans derive from His foreknowledge. He recognised in eternity past those things which are certain. The foreknowledge of God makes no things certain, but only perceives in eternity past those things that are certain.
12. There is a difference between foreknowledge and fore ordination. Fore ordination establishes certainty but does not provide for the certainty which is established. It is the plan that provides. (**Romans 8:29, Acts 2:23, 1 Peter 1:2**)
13. Therefore the elect are foreknown and the foreknown are elect. God knew in eternity past what way each free will would go for each particular problem in life. God does not coerce human free will but he does know what way each freewill will choose at any given time. As free will decides so God provides.
14. Since God cannot contradict his own character he plans the best for the believer. God is perfect, his plan and provisions are therefore perfect.
15. The cross was planned in eternity past but the human free will of Christ decided for the cross at Gethsemane. (**Matthew 26:39-42**) God has provided salvation through the cross and it is a free will decision as to whether one accepts it or not.
16. No plan in itself opposes human freedom but once a choice is made from the free will then the plan limits your human freedom. At the same time it gives you the freedom to love and appreciate God. God lays down the means of living the Christian life.

CHRIST – I AM

1. PROVISION - I AM THE BREAD OF LIFE – **John 6:30-35** - - The feeding of the five thousand - a miracle involving bread. God provided miraculous physical food in the desert for forty years - Manna.

Christ is our spiritual food. He says that he is the only source of spiritual food for you. There is life in no other. No one else can satisfy the spiritual hunger in man. He tells us He is the bread from heaven - He shows Himself as God. The bread of the Passover - unleavened, pierced and griddled; speaking of his body.

2. SPIRITUALITY - I AM THE LIGHT - **John 8:12** - The feast of Tabernacles where He told the people to have the everlasting water **John 7:37-39**

When the Lord says this He is saying that He is the only source of pure light as shown in His matchless character. He is stating that He is God 1 John 1 says that God is light and in Him is there no darkness at all. We are to walk in the light in fellowship with God.

3. SALVATION - I AM THE DOOR, - **John 10:7** - The Sheepfolds of Jerusalem. **Psalms 22-24**. To be the door of the sheepfold, He is the only way into the plan of God. Anyone that tries to come any other way is a liar and a thief. If this is not true there is no way to God.

4. GUIDANCE - I AM THE GOOD SHEPHERD **John 10:11** - the good shepherd, the only one who really cares. Many from other religions say that they really care but it is Jesus the good shepherd, the only one who really cares. All other systems drop you into hell.

5. THE RESURRECTION - **John 11:20-25** – I AM - The death of Lazarus - Christ conquers death proving He is God – the “I am” who met Moses; the resurrection and the life. He is the way the truth and life forever. The only way to eternal life is in Christ Jesus. To reject Him is to have eternal life in the Lake of Fire

6. TRUTH/LIFE - I AM THE WAY THE TRUTH AND THE LIFE **John 14: 6** - there is no other way to gain meaning in this life and eternal life than through him. We are related to the King of Kings and Lord of Lords who came and died for us that we might live. We should be obedient to our Lord who bought us with His blood.

He is the way, the truth, and the life; the only way to live is in the truth, the only way to have life and have it more abundantly is in Him. The only way to God is through the God man Jesus Christ. We need to live in him as He is the only one who has the truth because he is the truth. He can give life, for He is the Creator!

7. PRODUCTION - **John 15:1-5** – I AM THE VINE. Walking from the Passover meal past the Temple towards Gethsemane, he talks about the spiritual production that is ours in union with him. He is the vine; the only way to spiritual productivity is in Christ Jesus through the fruit of the Spirit. Love Joy Peace and the other fruit is only available in Christ. You have to be in the vine to have fruit. Many unbelievers want joy and peace but they cannot have it without Christ.

RELIGION

1. Satan's religion is a humanly acceptable one: no sin, no judgement, no Saviour and no Hell. Satan appears as an angel of light. (**2 Corinthians 11:13-19, 26**)

2. Many pastors in the churches are servants of Satan's policy, knowingly or unknowingly. (**Isaiah 30:12, Jeremiah 2:8, 2 Peter 2:1-10**)

3. Satan's strategy towards unbelievers is to keep them blinded to the gospel. (**2 Corinthians 4:3-4, Colossians 2:8, 2 Thessalonians 2:9-10**)

4. Satan's strategy towards believers is:-

- a) To confuse by false teaching. (**Matthew 7:15, Romans 16:18**)
- b) To appeal to pride. (**2 Corinthians 10:12**)
- c) To promote idolatry. (**Habakkuk 2:18, 19**)
- d) To promote legalism. (**1 Timothy 1:7-8**)

5. Satan's policy calls for counterfeit faith:-

- a) Counterfeit gospel. (**2 Corinthians 11:3-4**)
- b) Counterfeit pastors. (**2 Corinthians 11:13-15**)
- c) Counterfeit communion. (**1 Corinthians 10:19-21**)
- d) Counterfeit doctrine. (**2 Timothy 4:1**)
- e) Counterfeit righteousness. (**Matthew 19:16-28**)
- f) Counterfeit way of life. (**Matthew 23**)
- g) Counterfeit power. (**2 Thessalonians 2:8-10**)
- h) Counterfeit gods. (**2 Thessalonians 2:3-4**)

HARMONY

CHRIST ANSWERS THOMAS

And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know. Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way? Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

146 C – CHRIST ANSWERS PHILIP - JOHN 14:8-20

John 14:8 Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. 9 Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father? 10 Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works. 11 Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake. 12 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father. 13 And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. 14 If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it. 15 If ye love me, keep my commandments. 16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; 17 Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you. 18 I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you. 19 Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also. 20 At that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you.

KEY WORDS

Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Lord	Kurios	God, Lord, Master
Shew	Deiknuo	Show [Aorist Active Imperative]
Father	Pater	Father
Sufficeth	Arkeo	Be Satisfactory [Present Active Indicative]
Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Have I been	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
So Long	Tosoutos	So long
Time	Chronos	Time
With	Meta	Amidst
Yet Hast Thou Not	Ou	No, Not
Known	Ginosko	Know [Perfect Active Indicative]
Hath seen	Horao	Perceive, Behold [Perfect Active Participle]
Hath seen	Horao	Perceive, Behold [Perfect Active Indicative]
Sayest	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Shew	Deiknuo	Show [Aorist Active Imperative]
Believest	Pistueo	Believe [Present Active Indicative]
Am in	En	In
Words	Rhema	Words
Speak	Laleo	Speak [Present Active Indicative]
Speak	Laleo	Speak [Present Active Indicative]
Myself	Emautou	Myself
Dwelleth	Meno	Abide, Dwell [Present Active Participle]
Doeth	Poieo	Do [Present Active Indicative]
Works	Ergon	Work
Believe	Pistueo	Believe [Present Active Imperative]
Am in	En	In
Believe	Pistueo	Believe [Present Active Imperative]
For the very works sake	Dia ho autos ergon	For the very works sake

Verily	Amen	Truly, Point of doctrine
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Believeth	Pisteuo	Believe [Present Active Participle]
Do	Poieo	Do [Present Active Indicative]
Shall he do	Poieo	Do [Future Active Indicative]
Also	Takeinos	Likewise
Greater	Meizon	More
Shall he do	Poieo	Do [Future Active Indicative]
Because	Hoti	Because
Go	Poreuomai	Go [Future Middle Indicative]
Whatsoever	Hostis	Any that
Shall ask	Aiteo	Ask [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Name	Onoma	Name
Will I do	Poieo	Do [Future Active Indicative]
May be glorified	Doxazo	Glorify [Aorist Passive Subjunctive]
Son	Uihos	Son
Shall ask	Aiteo	Ask [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Anything	Tis	Anything
Do	Poieo	Do [Future Active Indicative]
Love	Agapao	Unconditional Love [Present Active Subjunctive]
Keep	Tereo	Keep [Future Active Indicative]
Commandments	Entole	Commandment
Will pray	Erotao	Request, Entreat [Future Active Indicative]
Shall give	Didomi	Give [Future Active Indicative]
Another	Allos	Another
Comforter	Parakletos	Comforter, Consoler
May abide	Meno	Abide [Present Active Subjunctive]
Ever	Aion	End
Even	-	Not in the original
Spirit	Pneuma	Spirit
Truth	Aletheia	Truth
World	Kosmos	World
Cannot	Dunamai	Have power [Present Middle Indicative]
Receive	Lambano	Receive [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Because	Hoti	Because
Seeth	Theoreo	See, Discern [Future Active Indicative]
Knoweth	Ginosko	Know [Present Active Indicative]
Know	Ginosko	Know [Present Active Indicative]
Dwelleth	Meno	Dwell [Present Active Indicative]
Shall be	Eimi	Keep on being [Future Middle Indicative]
In	En	In
Leave	Aphiemi	Leave [Future Active Indicative]
Comfortless	Orphanos	Fatherless, Comfortless
Will come	Erchomai	Come [Present Middle Indicative]
A little while	Mikron	Short while
Seeth	Thereo	See, Discern [Present Active Indicative]
See	Thereo	See, Discern [Present Active Indicative]
Live	Zao	Love [Present Active Indicative]
Shall live	Zao	Love [Future Active Indicative]
Day	Hemera	Day
Shall know	Ginosko	Know [Future Middle Indicative]
Am	-	Not in the original
Hath	Echo	Have and hold [Present Active Participle]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS

GINOSKO – TO KNOW – Occurs 222 times in the New Testament of which 18 times are in the Perfect Tense. Again John predominate the Perfect Tense using this form 7 times each in the Gospel and Letters. The remaining uses are by Paul in his letters to the Corinthians. With one exception it is in the Active Voice and with the exception of two in the Indicative Mood.

In the Gospel of John Jesus said He knew that the religious leaders did not have the love of God John 5:42 and they say that Jesus has a demon John 8:52, however the Lord Jesus Christ confirms to them that He knows God. John 8:55.

HORAO – TO SEE – Occurs 115 times in the New Testament with 31 times in the Perfect Tense. It is one of 10 Greek verbs translated “to see” and with “Blepo” means to physically see. John the Apostle dominates the use of “Horao” with 25 of the occasions in his Gospel and Letters. Horao is wholly in the Active Voice and in the Indicative Mood in all but two cases. In **John 14:7** Jesus talks about the Holy Spirit who they cannot See and follows two times in **John 14:9** that soon the world will not See Him but the disciples will See Him.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED AT THE FIRST COMING OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

ITEM	OLD TESTAMENT	DESCRIPTION	FULFILMENT
146C	Zechariah 13:7c	Both God and man	John 14:9

REFLECTION

8. Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. 9. Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father? 10. Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works. 11. Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake.

In verse 8 Philip asks the question, requesting that the Father appear before them. Let us have a dramatic experience, Philip is saying. Like many who “seek after signs”, they want a dramatic experience so that they can “bubble over” for the rest of their life, but this is not what occurs in life. Great emotional experiences pale into nothing and rather than bubbling over with truth, emotional people blubber all over the place with nonsense. Philip needs to draw close to the Lord, and grow in his relationship with Him. He needs to hear, believe and see the Father in his prayerful and biblically based relationship with Jesus. Note the perfect tenses that underline the permanent results of truly walking with the Lord.

The Lord gives the answer to that, and we must understand this, for many today ask the same question of God that Philip did. "You should have known". **John 1:18, 4:24**. Philip says, 'let the spirit be made flesh', and yet he is talking to the person who is indeed the spirit made flesh.

They wanted the blast of glory, the night to be turned to day. If God had really showed Himself they would have died in the blast that came. That is why God became flesh, Emmanuel, in the form of the Lord Jesus Christ. Philip is telling God how He should run things, and don't mock Philip for many of our prayers are “making helpful suggestions” to the Lord, so He knows what to do next.....

Remember this, and make sure your prayers are sensible. Prayer should always be requests not orders. When you pray you are in effect in heaven before God. You should be in there saying, “Father here am I ready for your orders”. Babies are demanding, and they need to be, because they are totally vulnerable and dependant on their parents, but we are meant to grow up, and so be more mature in our requests.

If you are chasing emotional experiences you will never grow spiritually, as you will never come under a pastor who will admonish you, and lead you to the hard things of the Word and encourage you to grow in difficult places. Philip here is asking for something which is not for his benefit, but that is the way with young children, who will often think they can do dangerous, even fatal things, and need the parent's correction.

It is dangerous to walk in the glow of visions rather than doctrine, for with an over-emphasis on experiential faith you will become very self centred unless the Word stabilizes the vision into doctrine that is truth. Sadly, if we persist in selfish desires to feel good all the time in our Christian walk we will become more and more self centred – and finally we will be daily becoming more submerged in our own emotions and problems, often resulting in nervous breakdowns. This is not God's path – **2 Timothy 1:7**.

In verses 9 - 11 Jesus says believe in the Father and that I am in the Father and if not look at the work I have done. Look at the evidence Philip, and recognise that I am showing you the Father.

Your relation with the Father is nothing more than your relation with Me, God with us Emmanuel. The terms Father and Son are anthropopathisms; they speak of things of God in terms which man can understand.

Cults say that Jesus Christ was born after the Father, this is not so. Jesus Christ was not descended from God; He is God become Man. **Isaiah 7:14, 9:6**. The terms used shows the perfect relationship between the members of the God head and their perfect knowledge and equality between each other.

The Son is said to be the only begotten, "monogenese", meaning literally, the "only born one". As God the Lord Jesus Christ was not born, He was always in existence, but in His hypostatic union He was born of the Virgin Mary.

The love of the Father and the Son had always been perfect but the incarnation allowed the human race to see that love, so that we could understand it in our minds. Love was demonstrated in the Lord's works, which were always in conformity with the Father's will which was His will as well.

APPLICATION

People who go after experiences are never satisfied, they always go after one more. That is why the signs and wonders movement is so addictive. They follow the signs and wonders for their own sake rather than emphasising the Cross. They jump from Church to Church. They are rightly called Church bunnies, church hoppers...", for they have no stability and chase experiences until they either lapse into mental illness, or leave the church and join a cultic group.

We do not need visions of glory, we need doctrines of power and grace, in order to live in the midst of the daily grind. You need God's Word in the power of the Holy Spirit in you to survive each and every day.

It is this application of the Lord to the plan worked out in eternity past that secures our salvation. There is an identity of purpose, an identity of power. To see the Lord Jesus Christ is to see the Father. There are three persons but there is absolute identity of character and life. The Lord became man to go to the Cross, but once He had put on flesh He kept it and He, as a human being, is sitting at the right hand of the Father.

The word "monogenese caused quite a lot of problems in the early church as to how He was made flesh. He became fully man and fully God. The humanity and deity were in perfect balance. Satan tried to test him as to being out of balance.

Verse 12. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father. 13. And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. 14. If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it. 15. If ye love me, keep my commandments.

The Lord told his disciples and by implication us that we should be able to accomplish more in our lives than He did. We of course can do nothing like what he accomplished in His death, but His ministry in life is something we are to accomplish for as we are indwelt by the Holy Spirit we have His power to use. He explains to Philip that He is the manifestation of God in the flesh.

They do not require a theophany, because they have got an epiphany. In the Son before them they see the Father - **Isaiah 7:14**. Jesus says, "open your eyes and see that I am God and live in My light, and in My power".

The Lord is perfect man and perfect God in his Hypostatic Union in His body. He depended on the power of the Holy Spirit, as shown in Philippians, where it states the Lord withheld His divine power to as to walk only in the Spirit's power as we would be challenged to do. **Philippians 2:5-11, Colossians 1:15-18**.

Most believers do not use their spiritual assets, they go it alone and attempt to do great things for God rather than letting God do great things through them, in Holy Spirit power. Self help and human power and techniques are not bona fide spiritual principles.

Jesus Christ on His earthly ministry said that His works were not of Himself but of the Father. We should follow that example. We are dependent on the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. This is why legalism is blasphemous.

Anything done in the power of the flesh is useless, but all done in the power of the Holy Spirit is spiritually powerful, and will earn eternal reward, for it is God's work.

A lot of people believe that if they fast it is going to release power to them. This is wrong. You cannot do something physical to affect yourself spiritually. Your physical status does not affect your spiritual service. The issue for the Christian is whether you have sin in your life or not and therefore whether you are controlled by the Holy Spirit. Fasting may be helpful to concentrate your mind and body on prayer, but things done in the flesh have little/no impact on spiritual life, but obedience to the Word does!

The Spirit needs a clean vessel through which to work. If there is unconfessed sin in your life your prayers will not be heard. Fasting may be legitimate for a believer at certain times but do not get side-tracked into a works form of spirituality by it! Legalism and OCD type "scrupulosity" is just humbug, not spiritual at all.

You can change your emotional state by standing up and reciting Scripture in Song for an hour, but you have done absolutely nothing spiritually, unless your heart is clean from sin and you are expressing love and worship for the Lord in your recitations.

DOCTRINE

GOD: WORK OF THE FATHER AND THE SPIRIT

1. The virgin birth is the work of the Father and the Spirit **John 1:18, Matthew 1:18, Luke 1:28**
2. At the Lord's baptism the Holy Spirit is given to the Lord without measure **John 3:34, Matthew 3:16**. The Lord's ministry begins with the special anointing of the Holy Spirit so that He can minister in the power of the Spirit
3. This is illustrated by the miracles of Christ which are done in the power of the Holy Spirit - **Matthew 12:18, Luke 4:14-21**
4. All the way through His ministry He expresses his obedience to His Father's will. The Lord Jesus Christ as God was present in eternity past at the divine decrees but he says that He must be about His Father's business.

His Father is the planner. He shows that he is in obedience as a man. We should also be that way. I have come in my Father's name he said **Luke 2:49, John 5:30, John 8:28, 38, 54**

5. All the works that were done were in the Father's name - **John 10:25, 32, 37**
6. The Lord speaks of the unity of the Father and himself **John 10:30, 14:20**. You in the father, I in the Father. We are in Him.
7. The Lord's obedience to the Father was total, in His humanity **John 14:28**. We must follow him in acknowledge that the Father is superior. The Lord's obedience in His graciousness is seen here. He sets us the example to follow. He takes the Father's will whether it was good or bad. At times you have a hard thing to take, you have a time of suffering **John 18:11**
8. The perfect relationship between the Father, Son and the Holy Spirit was suspended for those three terrible hours on the Cross when the Lord became sin for us in perfect obedience to the will of the Father. **2 Corinthians 5:21, Psalm 22:1, Matthew 27:46, Luke 15:34**

We are in union with the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, we are not only "in Christ", but we have a relationship with the Father, Son, and the Holy Spirit. **1 Thessalonians 1:1 cf. Ephesians 4:6**. We are in Christ and Christ is in us **John 14:20 cf. Colossians 1:27**. We are in the Holy Spirit and He is in us. **Romans 8:9**. You have the same relationship with the Father and Spirit as the Son has. You have a secure relationship in this union - **1 John 2:17, John 10:28-30**.

In the ancient world the seal was a guarantee for protection. The indwelling of the Holy Spirit guarantees our security. We can grieve the Spirit, we can quench the Spirit, but we can never lose the Spirit. We have as secure a place in the Lord as the Lord has had since eternity past. As the Lord depended on the Father and the Holy Spirit we should rely on the Father, Son and the Holy Spirit.

We must fulfil the Father's plan for our lives - **Romans 8:27, 12:1, 2**, we must walk in the Spirit **Galatians 5:16, Ephesians 4:30**. We must stand steadfast in Christ - **Colossians 2:5, 2 Corinthians 1:21, 2:14**.

This brings into focus the real "evil" of legalism, the thing that prevents the believer from being totally dependent on God, and keeps them deceived in satanic distraction of rules and laws that make them think they are spiritual when they are just legalistic. This shows how evil a system is, if it purports to show a short cut to the fruit/filling of the Holy Spirit, or a means by which we can get into participation with the filling of the Holy Spirit.

Legalism gets you away from absolute total dependence on Christ. There is no other way to be happy in Jesus but to trust and obey. Your life must be pure and holy. What can man add to God's plan? In our own Old Sin Nature strength we can add nothing other than something false.

Paul got very angry with the Galatians when they tried to bring in the Mosaic Law to assist them with spirituality. Paul says that it is anathema if you are given anything but the true gospel, for falsehood, or replaced past-systems cannot help you live in today's angelic conflict. **Galatians 1:6-10, 2:20 – 3:5**.

Even if an angel comes and tells you about a different gospel you are to tell him to, "get thee behind me Satan". Satan is the one that takes you away from the true gospel that blinds people to truth by pleasant lies. Do not depend on man; you depend on God alone. The unbeliever needs to come to Christ, not you or any other person. The Lord's people must go away from every service with God's thoughts in their hearts and minds, and not your thoughts.

In verse 12 Truly, truly, means, "Doctrine, doctrine". Jesus is saying that greater works in measure or number, not greater in quality, will we do. The Lord did perfect things but you can do greater in number as the Lord was ministering on the earth for only three years. If you have been saved more than three years you have a potential to do more things than the Lord under the power of the Holy Spirit. This is a great challenge to us.

He says that he goes to the Father, but more correctly He says, He set's His course to go to the Father. He is going to the Cross, and that is a course that He has set. What is going to happen is not going to be an accident. He warns them, "You are going to panic for three days and three nights".

However there is no doubt in the Lord's mind that He is going to be victorious, (the only doubts are in their minds at present), showing that the Lord was in control. You will be able to accomplish great things as you are obedient to God. Because God is in control, Jesus Christ is in control.

If you have My power, says the Lord, there is nothing that my Father ordains to be done that you cannot be involved in. The power is there, the plan is there, and so all you need to do is to get into the purpose of it, and find your place in it.

In verses 13-14 every time that you pray in His name you pray in accordance with His will if you are in fellowship with Him. When you pray in accordance with His will He will do what you request. What the Lord says He will do. The Character of God is on the line here. We need to ask for things in His name that the Father will be glorified in the Son.

You have to ask when you consider as matters for prayer, whether if God answers the prayer it will be glorifying to Him. This is when you know whether your prayers are legitimate, and even on target or not.

Our prayers are to be offered in (the locative of the sphere of), His name. Many believers never ask effectively for things in the Lord's name. Pray properly believer!

Take God seriously and believe God's Word. So many people do not believe the Word of Him that they have believed on for salvation. Ask that your prayers might glorify the Father. God wants to work in His power and not practice the desires of our Old Sin Nature and the philosophies of man.

The Lord repeats the important principle of prayer, of asking in His name, in **John 14:13-14**. The Jewish people prayed with their heads bowed and often covered, and their hands raised palms upwards. This is the posture of surrender, where the head is bowed and so you cannot defend yourself. The person would then start talking and pour their heart out to God, but did not necessarily pray "in God's name" and this is the Lord's challenge to them from this moment forward.

The Lord Jesus Christ said that when you pray do so, "in my name". This would have been a great shock to them, so the Lord repeated it. Asking in the Lord's name is not a magic formula, it is a formal introduction to the prayer to ensure it will be answered. It is asking our heavenly Father for things on the basis of our relationship and fellowship with the Son, and is made while we are under the control of the Holy Spirit.

The prayer is effective because you have a relationship which is real in the Lord Jesus Christ. In the ancient world if you came before a king or ruler, you would adopt "the posture" and then introduce yourself, explaining in whose name you came, to dare to approach the king. If you came in the name of the king's son, you were "checked out", and when this was found to be the case, the palace was open to you!

This is the principle behind asking in the Lord's name in prayer. We boldly approach the throne of grace, **Hebrews 4:16**, in the Son's name, and the doors and store-houses of heaven are opened to answer our prayers.

Prayer is powerful when your will is in conformity with God's will, if you are thinking in conformity with the Lord's revealed policies, you are in the path of power. There is no mystery about power in prayer. If you are out of fellowship your prayers will not be answered. When in fellowship as you mention the Lord Jesus Christ in your prayer you recognise grace and the fact that you have no right to stand before God or to ask God for anything in and of yourself. But that in Him you have a place in heaven, you belong there. You are a member of His body and covered by the blood of Christ. **1 Peter 1:19-25, 2:7-10**. You will glorify the one in whom you have that relationship if you ask according to His will. This then is the confidence we can have in our Holy Spirit filled prayers.

2 Thessalonians 1:12 - prayer demands position. **1 Peter 4:11**. Each day we are to pray that the Lord's name might be glorified. We must be in Christ, in His Word, and in His Will. We are accepted in the beloved - **Ephesians 1:6**.

John 17:23 ff is the real "Lord's Prayer" as we will see. He brought out the principle there, that you are loved as a Christian, as the Son is loved. If you doubt that the Lord is going to hear your prayer read through John 17, and we will do this below. You are heard by the Father, as the Son is heard by the Father.

Jude 20 says pray in the Holy Ghost, pray in absolute oneness with the Holy Spirit. What you are saying is what God is saying when you do this, and so this is powerful prayer. **John 15:7** says that, "if you abide in Me, and My words abide in you, you shall ask for anything and it shall be done unto you". Here we have a combination of fellowship and obedience.

Key passages in prayer in this area are **John 14:12-15, 15:7-10, 16:23-24**. These verses record the conversation that occurred as they are walking from the upper room to the garden of Gethsemane. This is one discourse. We have potentially the power of God in our hands as the Lord tells the disciples here. These are three key passages to start a study in prayer. Remember this is the night before he is to be crucified.

God is not thinking about your prayers, He is answering them. The problem is not with unanswered prayer as the Lord says that all those prayers which are asked in His name and according with His will will be answered. It is therefore a matter of us becoming aware of His answer. The answer to prayer is God's, not ours. Prayer is latching on to what God is doing, and praying in accordance with that. God does not look at our foolishness he looks at our position in Christ Jesus.

The only prayer for deliverance that could not be answered was the one prayed on the Cross by our Lord, My God My God why has thou forsaken me? The Lord had to stay there separated from the Father and the Holy Spirit, as He became sin for us, that we might be delivered. We are now in a position where we have three people involved in our prayers, the Father, Son, and the Holy Spirit. You are never alone in your prayer.

The cardinal points are then, that firstly, you need to be in Christ and in fellowship so that secondly, you can ask in accordance with His will and therefore pray aright. If you are not doing what you should be doing your life is wrong and your prayers will be skewed. All things must be geared to serving Him and bringing glory to Him. If we do not get the abiding right we will not be getting the praying right either.

The so called, "disciples prayer" (we call it the "Lord's Prayer") is given in the Sermon on the Mount which was well before the time of John 14-17. It is necessary to take the Lord's teaching on prayer in sequence.

This is further amplified after the day of Pentecost when there is more teaching in prayer. As believers you start with the disciple's prayer but you need to recognise where the apostles are later, and you should be growing in your prayer life as they did.

If the believer can only pray the disciple's prayer, they are a baby. Jesus' name is not there. He is not the High Priest at that time. Everything is there in the disciple's prayer, but it has to germinate and grow. Do not use the so called "Lord's Prayer" in a service unless it is for very young or disturbed believers (a funeral). Think about the disciple's prayer for a minute; don't we wish to be forgiven as the Lord forgave us on the Cross, not as we forgive others? We are to live in the whole book and not just in the first chapter.

APPLICATION

We in our imperfect humanity need to depend on the Holy Spirit, in a similar way to the Lord in His perfect humanity depended on it. He was also dependent on the Father.

The Father and the Spirit are one in upholding the Lord. We see this in his wonderful prayer in John 17.

Take in the Word of God, believe it, and apply it into the very fabric of your life.

Start claiming the promises of God and walk by faith and not by feeling. If we are going to serve Him we have to do it in the way that He did.

We must do it in accordance with His will and not ours, then we can sing and praise him with spiritual power and focus in our minds.

God will accomplish things through us if we are in conformity with His will. Looking back on our lives many hours have been lost. This is a challenge. We have the whole power of the Godhead behind us; we have everything we need.

Prayer and fasting is bona fide, and the early church did them both together, but beware in this area! In some cases fasting is detrimental to the Spiritual life. Fasting is often used as an issue to produce spirituality rather than dealing with sin in the believer's life.

If it gets people away from obedience to the Spiritual issues it is a distraction and wrong, but if used to focus the mind for a special issue of prayer it is bone fide. Fasting is for bodily discipline, and has great value in challenging the believer to focus on the spirit rather than their body.

The early church practised two fast days a week in the Jewish Model, or no solid food between 6am and 6pm.

Verse 16. And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; 17. Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

As we see above successful prayer depends upon three things; your obedience to God's Word, your life in Him and your fellowship with Him. Your prayer flows from your position and your obedience. Our approach to the throne of grace is with boldness, not because of ourselves but because of Him, and our relationship and fellowship with him.

All believing prayer is bold. Because of our position in Him we have a place of power and privilege. The appreciation and use of this powerful activity depends on whether we are spiritual or not.

There are three passages on prayer which were given by the Lord on the walk from the upper room to the Garden of Gethsemane, they are **John 14:12-15; 15:7-10; 16:23-24**. It is important that all these passages on prayer are taken and studied together. Remember, as we have seen already, the first "Disciples Prayer" is a very starting point, and each new teaching point needs to be added into the picture to build what ought to be our daily present practise.

In John 15 Jesus is emphasising obedience to his will, showing the importance of contact between each of us and the He, who gave Himself for us. God wants to hear from us each day and through each day.

It is against the backdrop of this prayer that the Lord mentions the ministry of the Holy Spirit in **John 14:16-17**. We must always look at God's Word in context. After the resurrection appearances of the Lord Jesus Christ He is going to be away from them permanently, so he tells them here what has been arranged in eternity past to deal with his physical absence.

He is going to give all believers the gift of the Holy Spirit, another comforter of the same kind as Himself, to replace Himself, as the immediate contact/presence point for our daily communication. This is "another" paraclete. Up to this time, they have had the physical presence of the Lord Jesus Christ, whilst afterwards they will have the spiritual indwelling of the Holy Spirit.

What He is saying is that the indwelling presence of the Holy Spirit within each believer, will be as real as the physical presence of the Lord Jesus Christ when he had a ministry on the earth and walked beside each of them. What the Holy Spirit will do for you and I daily, will be the same as what the Lord Jesus Christ did for the disciples during those three years of earthly ministry.

The physical presence of the Lord Jesus Christ was real when they were talking to Him and listening to Him while they were attending Him, but when they were not attending to Him they forgot His words and drifted from fellowship with him into despair (this is especially true after His death and before the resurrection).

We have a similar situation with believers today, as the Holy Spirit is with us all moments of every day, but many Christians are not aware of the presence of the Holy Spirit, because they are not communing with Him in their life. As a believer in the Lord Jesus Christ the Holy Spirit is within you. Your awareness of Him however is in direct relationship to you communing with Him, as you meditated upon the Word of God and focus on your ministry upon earth and prayer to the Father about issues that arise, and worship Him.

There are six points in these verses regarding the giving of the Holy Spirit:-

1. The Lord asked the Father that the Spirit should be sent. It is absolutely certain that this prayer was answered. If the Lord Jesus Christ is praying the prayer it is certainly answered. If you are a believer the Lord has sent the Holy Spirit to you. The Lord does the work; He has sent the Spirit. The Spirit is not under our control, He is under the control of the Father and the Son. The Holy Spirit is God, but there is protocol in the Godhead, and a divine plan from eternity past, which involves God the Father, after the prayer of the Son, sending the Holy Spirit.
2. The Holy Spirit is called a Comforter - parakletos - which means advocate, intercessor and comforter. It means someone who stood beside you in court, and talked for you on your behalf. The court is the court of heaven as we approach the throne of grace. **Romans 8:26**.
3. That He might be with you for ever. You can grieve the Spirit with sin, you can quench Him with evil but He is with you forever. In the Old Testament it was possible for the Holy Spirit to be taken from you but from Pentecost on it is not a possibility.

These two verses are the most powerful verses on Pneumatology in the Bible. The change from the old system to the new was due to a progression of the Divine Plan. What the Lord was going to do on the Cross was going to open up a new phase of spiritual life for mankind, a new place and position for believers. He is with us until literally right to the end of time.

4. He is called the Spirit of truth - cf. **John 14:6**. If the Lord Jesus Christ is the truth and the Holy Spirit is the spirit of truth you do not have one working without the other. We need to live in the truth. Prayer is going to flow from the life that is lived in the sphere of the truth!
5. The world cannot receive the Spirit. The natural unsaved man or woman cannot receive anything of the Spirit, because spiritual things are spiritually discerned. **1 Corinthians 2:14-16, John 6:63**. It is the Spirit that quickens, the flesh does not profit at all.

When you hear the liberals talk about Jesus or "the Christ", it is not the same person that we know. As a believer you have to be aware of where they are in relation to the Word of God, and keep yourself in the right place for there are many who use Jesus' name but do not know Him, and He does not acknowledge them! You have many unbelievers who think they are believers, but have a form of religion, which is not Christianity, for they deny the power of it. Their view is that it is to be nice and grow nicer and encourage one another. Do not expect the unbeliever to understand the things of Christ.

We need to see past denominational barriers and have fellowship in the Spirit and the Word with all genuine fellow believers. In all the churches you will find people who are following the Lord. The only way the ministry of the Holy Spirit is received is through salvation. They must accept the Word of truth and the Lord Jesus Christ.

6. The major change at the day of Pentecost was that the Holy Spirit dwelt with them prior to Pentecost but from that time He will be in them permanently. The difference between the "with" and "in" is one of the largest differences between the Church Age and the Age of Israel. The church was born on the day of Pentecost. Everything is different for spirituality from that day onwards.

He not only helps you with prayer and daily living He will get you to heaven as well. "I am with you physically", said the Lord, "but when the Spirit comes He will be in you forever". Physically the Lord Jesus Christ could only be in one place at one time. The Spirit however is omnipresent.

Here before he goes to the Cross he paints them a picture of what is going to happen because of the Cross. It took them a long time to come to grips with how wonderful it was that the Holy Spirit would indwell.

This again shows the absolute confidence of the Lord as he goes to the Cross, the Cross is no accident; there is no doubt in the Lord's mind that He is doing the Father's will, and that the Holy Spirit will come upon them all, and be with them, and later, on Pentecost Sunday, the Holy Spirit will permanently indwell them all. This indicates the Lord's full control.

APPLICATION

When you pray you are going boldly straight to the throne of grace. **Hebrews 4:16**. When you are praying you are not praying alone, you have someone in you praying for you.

In **Romans 8:26** we have the Holy Spirit praying for us with groans that cannot be uttered. Prayer is not a solo operation; it is always you and the Spirit.

If you have grieved or quenched the Spirit in your life the prayer will not be heard, so confession of sin is vital to ensure fellowship is not lost and prayer rendered powerless.

If there is any situation where you think you can lose the Spirit this says forget it because He is still there. If he is not assisting you he is convicting you of your sins because of carnality.

You do not lose the Holy Spirit as a believer; he simply changes his emphasis within you depending on what you are doing spiritually.

Because of our position in the Church Age we have a superior position than David had. Very few people received the ministries of the Holy Spirit in the Old Testament.

In Christ all believers have this great ministry. The sad fact today is that so few believers live in the awareness of it. **1 Thessalonians 5:24** - the spirit is with you forever. He is faithful, and if we have not been we need to deal with the matter quickly.

Are we going to be either, walking in the Spirit, or walking in disobedience? The key to powerful prayer is obedience; the key is walking in the Spirit, walking in obedience to the Word of life.

The Holy Spirit is in us to empower us, to assist us and strengthen us. It should be noted that the indwelling will be in the future from the time which the Lord was telling the disciples.

If you have nothing to praise God for today at least you can praise Him for the everlasting gift of the Holy Spirit indwelling you forever.

Verse 18. I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you.

19. Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also. 20. At that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you.

At the Cross all the disciples except John fled, they were depressed because the Cross crushed them. It was only the reality of the physical bodily resurrection which changed them. Remember these times in your own life believer; the best of men and women know despair, and lose their doctrinal perspective at times.

Do not despair, for it is always darkest before the dawn. The Lord Jesus Christ said that He will come back, and encourages them to have confidence. The message was still true even though they did not see it at the time. All this is happening in the middle of the night before the Cross. They cannot even contemplate the thought of His death at the moment.

In verse 18 the word used here for comfortless means that the Lord will not leave us as orphans as someone who has no one to look after them. They will leave Calvary, thinking they have been left, but Christ says that He will come back to them. It will not be a ghost that returns; the Lord will be back in His transformed body.

There are many "make believers" who are sitting in the pews who think they are Christians but are not, and so they have no confidence and assurance, but that is not our position. The Lord now gives the doctrine of eternal security to believers only; Judas has already gone by this point.

These verses cover the things the disciples need to know for the next fifty days to Pentecost. The Lord says that He will come to them. The word to come is "erchomai"; present, middle, indicative, of the verb, meaning, to come face to face with you.

He is emphasising that it is Him, not a ghost or a vision, He is coming in resurrection. The middle voice is one of benefit, it is going to benefit the disciples that Christ is coming. Indicative mood is one of reality. The Lord is in control from the beginning to the end.

To you, "pros" - this means that He is coming back face to face with you. You will think that the relationship is broken but it is not as you are going to have an eternal relationship with Me. He says that the relationship will be richer than before. He says that He will be away for a short time and then will appear to them but the world will not see Him, as He will appear only to believers.

Jesus Christ made a number of recorded appearances after His resurrection. The Lord is living in His resurrection body after the Cross and they will also live in resurrection. We have eternal life, which the Lord has given us. This knowledge will turn these people, and the world they preach to upside down.

Here the Lord Jesus Christ says that He is not only at the right hand of the Father but He also is in the believer. The Holy Spirit is called the Spirit of Christ here. When you teach through the Word the Spirit creates fruit in your life. The Holy Spirit was sent by Christ, and therefore He is called the Spirit of Christ. He ministers Christ to your soul.

It is only the believer who has the comfort of having a living relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ. Know ye not that Christ be in you, lest thou be reprobates, or make believers. We must look at everything in our life through the Cross. **2 Corinthians 13: 4 - 9.**

The Lord says in **Revelation 3:20** that He wants to come in and fellowship with us. You are going to have to pay attention to the Lord if you are going to do that. 1 John is the letter which goes with the Gospel of John as an explanation of the Gospel. **1 John 3:24** comments on this section – "he that keepeth his commandments". We know that He dwells in us by the Spirit he has given us. We fellowship with the Lord by keeping his commandments. There is no fellowship with the Lord if you are disobedient to his Word. As you enliven the Word to your life people will see it for Christ likeness of character will shine through.

Romans 8: 9-13. It is the holy life that sets apart the believer. That is our standard and that is to be the basis of our testimony to the world of Christ's power; the world sees what Christ has done with us!

In verses 19-20 we keep on seeing the Lord through the work of the Holy Spirit within. The Lord's complete victory will be ours also. Because He keeps on living, so we will keep on living also.

In verse 18 He speaks of the reality of eternal security.

In verse 19 He speaks of the reality of eternal life.

In verse 22 He tells them that all this will make sense on the coming Feast Day of Pentecost.

We are truly blessed with all spiritual blessings in Christ Jesus. **Ephesians 1:3, 1 John 5:11, 12.** We have eternal life, we have eternal security in this life, and we have a great privilege to serve the one who has opened up such blessing for us. Let us do so!

This is a very simple sentence but very powerful in its content. The Lord is introducing the topic of union with Christ. We are in a new position; we are in Christ Jesus. We were in sin, and we are now in Christ Jesus. All Christians should understand it, very few do. The blessing of being placed in union with Christ cannot be overestimated. We are in a position of absolute privilege and power by being in Christ.

The context of imputation is also given in verses 18-20. Jesus says that because I live you shall live also. We are talking about the Lord Jesus Christ in His resurrection body. We are talking about resurrection life, eternal life here. In His humanity He died. He however has risen from the dead, and in His humanity He has everlasting life. As God He could not die but as man He did for you and me. He says that He is going to have everlasting life in His body and we are going to as well.

The Lord says that you will know that I am in you. This is a ministry of the Holy Spirit. We are now approaching Pentecost fifty days away at this point, and the statements in John 14-17 apply to what is going to happen in the Church Age. When the Lord talks about what he wins on the Cross, He is going to include what He achieves through the resurrection, ascension, and the sending the Holy Spirit on the Feast of Pentecost.

The Spirit is going to indwell the disciples, and to start to show them things, that during the Lord's earthly ministry they didn't understand. You will know, Jesus tells them, that I am in the Father, that there is unity in the Godhead. More than that you will have a unity with me also.

As I am one with the Father so you are one with Me. This shows just how strong a position they were, and we are in. Our union with Him is as strong as His union with the Father and our union with the Father.

The Father imputes to us His perfect righteousness. We cannot get into relationship with the sinless one unless God does something for us so that we can be brought in. If one sinner goes to heaven with sin it is no longer heaven. God is not in the habit of drawing sin to Himself, He hates sin and therefore He deals with the sin, and that is what the Cross is about – the Son will do the job needed to open the path for us to heaven.

He then gives you His righteousness, not in accordance with what you have done, but what He has done for you. You did not earn or deserve it, you were filled with His righteousness, and He gave it to you so that he might enter you into relationship with Him, a relationship which you are totally incapable of having because of your Old Sin Nature.

In verse 20, you have grace - "ye in Me and I in you", is a grace relationship - **1 Corinthians 6:11**. You are washed, you are sanctified, you are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus and by the Spirit of our God.

God's grace answers our needs at salvation, removing sin and putting it on Christ where it is judged. Then by addition He gives us His righteousness and justifies us in Christ because of what He has done.

If you believe in the Lord Jesus Christ you commit yourself to Him as Saviour and Lord. You are declared justified in that act of faith, because of what God does. You are justified by grace through faith. **Ephesians 2:8, 9**. We only ever stand strong in this world through the shed blood of Christ; we are always trusting in his finished work for us.

Imputation means attributing or ascribing something to someone from someone else. It is a judicial function of giving something to someone which was not theirs, and which they haven't earned.

The first imputation was that of sin to the human race as a result of Adam - **Romans 5:12-21**. God imputed Adam's sin to everybody, so that everybody's sins could, by perfect justice, be imputed to Christ, and then His righteousness, be imputed to mankind, by grace through faith.

The statue of Justice is seen as a woman of tender mercy, righteous in herself, blindfolded so that there is no partiality, with scales in one hand to show that everything is weighed and is just, and a sword in the other for the punishment of the guilty.

It is not fair if God solely hits you with Adam's sin, but God also imputed the sins of mankind to Christ. This is the second imputation. Remember, that sin, because of the Cross, and Jesus receiving all our sins (imputation again), sin is no longer an issue between man and God. Because of this second imputation; belief in Christ is the only issue, for sin is gone as an object to separate us from God – the sin barrier is down in Christ Jesus! What will each woman and each man's response be to the imputation of sin to Christ? Will

that person accept the Saviourhood of the Lord Jesus Christ, or will they trust in their own righteousness for their eternal life?

The righteousness of Christ, the third imputation, is potentially available to all members of the human race. You get righteousness imputed to yourself, through your faith in the Lord Jesus Christ. The believer has been given the righteousness of Christ. In **John 14:20** the believer enters into unity with Christ, a new status and position above the state of sin. God now sees you covered with the righteousness of Christ. **Romans 4:17-25**. Those who depend solely upon the righteousness of Christ to save them are saved, those who trust their own righteousness are lost forever, and join their proud father, Satan, in the Lake of Fire.

The implication of all of this is that you should be living righteously; you should hold your relationship with the Lord as the dearest thing in your life. Resist sin and deal with it and try and live in righteousness day by day as you do all you can to maintain active fellowship with Christ. In John 14 the Lord says that the relationship that He has with the Father is the same as the relationship that He wants us to have with Him.

If you are living as a believer in the regular habit of sin, you are still in Christ, but you are carnal. Your eternal life begins the moment you accept the Lord Jesus Christ as your Saviour, but the battle from then on is the one to maintain fellowship and spiritual power/direction. When you see a mature Christian live or die it is a joy to behold. The question is whether you are living as a Christian should be living. If you have God's righteousness, and are walking with Him in close fellowship, you living in conformity with God's righteousness? Are you living in total holiness or are you toying with sin and walking off God's path for you?

Many Christians do not take this challenge up, and so never know the joy of living in Christ, actively serving him. We are blessed in heavenly places, but a lot of Christians are wasting their assets and not enjoying their time here. All believers have great wealth in Christ Jesus, but never use it. Your position in Christ explains both election and predestination. We are new creatures in Christ Jesus, we have eternal security and temporal responsibility.

Some of the implications of this are - we have eternal life, God's righteousness and many other assets. Have you ever noticed that Romans 8 starts with no condemnation and ends with no separation. We have a relationship, we have a position that is wonderful beyond words. Apply it to your life in moment by moment sanctification. Make sure that day by day you use the things that He has given you, walk with Him, talk with Him, feed on Him.

God has given assets, and as is seen in the parable of the talents, he expects us to use them. In the parable when the master returns, he confronts them and asks what they had done with the riches they had been given. The person who buried it and did not use it was condemned for their attitude. Those who did use them were blessed.

God has given you a great asset in the form of union with Christ, and the indwelling ministries of the Holy Spirit, which are like pearls beyond price. You have a spiritual bank account which is tremendous. He wants you to bring glory to Him now so that you can be rewarded later. The power is there to be used. Failure to use what God has provided will bring judgement for that lazy and disrespectful person who ignored God's bountiful provision.

APPLICATION

Once you are a child of God He will not leave you comfortless, He will be with you always. We, as saints, have a position that cannot be altered, in Christ Jesus, whereas the "aints" have nothing.

One of the greatest studies you can do if you fear being cast aside by the Lord is to see Peter denying Christ, for the Lord restores Peter and then we see the mouse become a lion after the resurrection and Pentecost.

He was, frightened of a little girl on this night, yet within fifty days he preaches in front of thousands. The sign of a person being a believer is that their lives are changed. If you have met the resurrected Christ, so your life is transformed.

We should be living in the power of the Holy Spirit and not in the flesh and under the control of our sinful nature.

The fruit of the Spirit is the working out of the Spirit's presence in your life. If you have a "Christian" wallowing in sin she/he may be a believer, but if they are, they won't wallow long, for they will be under conviction.

If the Holy Spirit is in you and fellowshiping with you, you cannot wallow in sin without ripping yourself apart.

When a Christian sins she/he is broken by it, when a "make believer" sins it does not bother them at all because they are none of His. **Romans 8:9**.

There are many people sitting in a pew who are going to hell with a Bible under their arm. You shall know them by their fruits. **Matthew 7:15-23**.

Are you enjoying the life that Jesus promised, the more abundant life? - **John 10:10**.

We have great privilege in Christ, we have great possessions and resources. We have great fellowship with Him as we obey His Word.

We should be living in appreciation of what the Lord has done and the life transforming power of the Holy Spirit in us through which we have fellowship with Him.

Be a doer of the Word and make your faith real. Get to know the Lord in your heart so that He can come in and fellowship with Him.

We have new privilege and power and new potential. Here and now you have a position in Christ. That position is the most important thing for our life on earth. It affects your witness.

Everything in the Christian life starts in the fact of union with Christ. You are in an unbreakable situation with Christ.

Your position with Christ has two applications; you are with Him in His death as well as being with Him in His resurrection.

Day by day you rest on what He has done for you at the Cross (looking backwards), and you live in what He has done for you in the resurrection and through the gift he gave the church the Holy Spirit.

Day by day you should be dealing with your sin because of what He has done for you.

DOCTRINES

RESURRECTION - see page 15

CHRISTIAN LIFE - POSITION IN CHRIST

1. We have a position with Christ rather than a position with the cosmos system. We are separated from the world and are different from them. We have a new position in Christ - **Ephesians 2:6**
2. We have a new position of partnership with Christ, we are never alone. - **Colossians 3:4, John 17**. We have a communion with him. He says that he will never put us in a situation without a way of escape. The way of escape is through Christ.
3. We are workers together with God, we are in his service - **2 Corinthians 3:9, 1:9, 6:1**
4. We are ministers of a new covenant, we have a new message to man. **1 Corinthians 3:6, 6:4**
5. We are ambassadors for Christ - **2 Corinthians 5:20**
6. We are living epistles, we are letters to a lost and unsaved world. Our lives should be such that Christ should be read from the book of our lives. Our life and lips should tell of Christ and Him alone.
7. We are members of the Royal family - **Galatians 6:10, 1 Peter 2:9**
8. We are united with the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit:

- a) We are in the Father, he is in us - **Ephesians 4:6**,
- b) We are in Christ - **John 14:20**,
- c) He is in us - **Colossians 1:26**,
- d) We are in the Spirit and he is in us - **Romans 8:9**.
- e) We are united forever to God.
- f) We are not part of a universal soul. That is new age.
- g) We have been entered into a living union with a personal God.

9. We are members of his body, branches of his vine, living stones, his building, sheep of his fold, part of his bride, priests in his kingdom, saints set apart for his glory.

GOD: CHARACTER OF GOD

1. Whilst God is three persons all three persons have exactly the same essence or character:

a) SOVEREIGNTY

The Father (**Ephesians 1:11** , cf **Isaiah 40:8**, **Matthew 6:10**, **Hebrews 10:7, 9**)

The Son (**John 5:21**, **Revelation 19:16**)

The Spirit (**1 Corinthians 12:11** , cf **Hebrews 2:4**)

b) RIGHTEOUSNESS

The Father (**John 17:25**)

The Son (**Luke 1:35**, **Hebrews 7:26**, **2 Corinthians 5:21**)

The Spirit The Holy Spirit

c) JUSTICE

The Father (**Job 37:23**, cf **8:3**)

The Son (**Acts 3:14**, **John 5:22**, **Revelation 19:11**)

The Spirit (**Nehemiah 9:20**)

d) LOVE

The Father (**John 3:16**)

The Son (**Ephesians 5:25**, **1 John 3:16**)

The Spirit (**John 16:7-11**, **1 Corinthians 2:10**)

e) ETERNAL LIFE

The Father (**John 5:26**)

The Son (**Micah 5:2**, cf **John 1:1-2**, **1 John 5:11**)

The Spirit (**Isaiah 48:16**)

f) ALL-KNOWING

The Father (**Hebrews 4:13**, cf **Matthew 11:27**, **1 Peter 1:2**)

The Son (**John 18:4**, cf **Matthew 9:4**, **John 2:25**, **1 Corinthians 4:5**)

The Spirit (**Isaiah 11:2**, cf **1 Corinthians 2:11**)

g) EVERYWHERE

The Father (**2 Chronicles 2:6**)

The Son (**Matthew 28:20**, cf **Ephesians 1:23**)

The Spirit (**Psalms 139:7**)

h) ALL-POWERFUL

The Father (**Mark 14:36**, cf **1 Peter 1:5**)

The Son (**Hebrews 1:3**, cf **Matthew 24:30**, **2 Corinthians 12:9**, **Philippians 3:21**)

The Spirit (**Romans 15:19**)

i) UNCHANGEABLE

The Father (**Hebrews 6:17**, **Psalms 33:11**)

The Son (**Hebrews 13:8**)

The Spirit (**John 14:16**)

j) TRUTH

The Father (**John 7:28, John 17:3**)
 The Son (**1 John 5:20, cf John 1:14, 14:6, Revelation 19:11**)
 The Spirit (**1 John 5:6, cf John 14:17, 15:26, 16:13**)

GOD - TRINITY

1. There is one God. He has manifest Himself in three personalities. (**2 Samuel 23:1-3, Isaiah 48:16, Isaiah 63:7-10, Matthew 28:19, Acts 2:33, 2 Corinthians 13:14**)

2. The oneness of God refers to the unity or sameness of character. All three members of the Trinity are equal (**Philippians 2:6, Deuteronomy 6:4, Acts 17:29, Romans 1:20, Colossians 2:9**), although they have different functions/purposes in relation to man.

3. The three members are distinguished according to their function in the plan of salvation (**1 Peter 1:2-3**)

a) The Father - the authority, who planned our salvation (**Isaiah 14:27, John 4:34, 5:17, 12:44, 1 Corinthians 8:6a, Ephesians 3:11**)

b) The Son - the obedient son, who was born as a man, died for our sins, and rose from the dead (**John 4:34, 5:17, Hebrews 10:7**)

c) The Holy Spirit - the ministering servant, who reveals the Son and sanctifies us (**John 16:8-11**).

4. The Son is the only visible member of the Trinity. (**John 1:18, 6:46, 1 Timothy 6:16, 1 John 4:12**). He was revealed in the Old Testament in Christophanies (eg the Angel of Jehovah) and became flesh in the New Testament. (**Exodus 3:14 cf John 8:58; Psalm 10:16 cf Revelation 11:15; Zechariah 14 cf Revelation 19**)

5. Evidences of the Trinity

a) Affirmed by the use of the title Elohim (plural, Gods) in the Old Testament and the plural pronoun "us" in (**Genesis 1:26, 3:22, 11:7**).

b) The worship of God we have repeated three times "Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God Almighty (**Isaiah 6:3, Revelation 4**)

c) The name (singular) of the Father, Son and Holy Spirit indicates Trinity. (**Matthew 28:19-20**)

d) The Lord's Baptism - the Spirit descends, the Father speaks from heaven and the Son is baptised. (**Matthew 3**)

6. Light is a good illustration of the Trinity. (**1 John 1:5**) Light is one, but has three elements.

a) Father - actinic light - that part of light which is invisible, nor felt.

b) Son - luminiferous - that part of light which is both seen and felt.

c) Spirit - calorific - that part of light which is not seen but felt.

SIN – IMPUTATION

1. Abraham is the pattern of imputation of divine righteousness. (**Genesis 15:6**)

2. Divine righteousness is imputed only on the basis of faith in Christ. (**Romans 3:22**)

3. Many Gentiles of Old Testament times found God's righteousness by believing in Christ while many Jews, relying on the Law, missed imputation. (**Romans 9:30-33**)

4. Imputation is the basis of Justification. (**Romans 4:22, 5:1**)

5. Imputation encourages faith in Christ. (**Romans 4:24, 25**)

6. Imputation is based on the work of Christ on the Cross. (**2 Corinthians 5:21**)

CHRISTIAN LIFE: ETERNAL SECURITY

1. When a person truly trusts Jesus Christ for salvation, he is saved forever. He cannot lose his salvation.

2. POSITIONAL APPROACH (**Romans 8:38-39**)

We are united with Christ ("in Christ"). Absolutely nothing can separate us from the love of God which is in Christ.

3. LOGICAL APPROACH (Romans 8:32, Romans 5)

As unbelievers we are enemies of God (Romans 5), as believers we are his children. If he did the most for his enemies what will he do for his children? This excludes loss of salvation for he saved us while we were his enemies.

4. GOD'S HANDS APPROACH (John 10:28, Psalm 37:24)

Neither shall anyone seize them out of my hand. God is all powerful.

5. EXPERIENTIAL APPROACH (2 Timothy 2:12-13)

If we deny Christ He is going to deny us rewards (context=suffering and rewards). If we renounce Him, HE REMAINS FAITHFUL. The believer is in Christ and Christ indwells the believer. He cannot deny Himself.

6. THE FAMILY APPROACH (Galatians 3:26, John 1:12)

When you believe in Christ you are born again as a child of God. You cannot be unborn, once a child always a child.

7. THE INHERITANCE APPROACH (1 Peter 1:4-5)

We have an inheritance incorruptible, undefiled which fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for us who are kept by the power of God. Perfect tense - it will always be reserved, since it is kept by God, not us.

8. THE SOVEREIGNTY APPROACH (2 Peter 3:9, Jude 24)

He is not willing that any should perish - refers to the whole human race (2 Peter 3:9) Now unto him who is able to keep you from falling (from perishing). Once you are saved, it is His will that you don't perish.

9. THE BODY APPROACH (1 Corinthians 12:21, Colossians 1:18)

Christ is the head, we are the members of the body. If any are lost, the body of Christ is incomplete.

10. THE GREEK TENSE APPROACH (Ephesians 2:8-9)

"For by Grace are ye saved". Perfect tense of the verb "sozo". For by Grace have you been saved in the past so that you go on being saved forever.

11. THE SEALING MINISTRY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT APPROACH (2 Corinthians 1:22, Ephesians 1:13, 4:30)

In the ancient world the seal was a guarantee for protection. The indwelling of the Holy Spirit guarantees our security.

HOLY SPIRIT IS GOD

1. The Holy Spirit is God, the third member of the Trinity.
2. The Holy Spirit is Jehovah God (Isaiah 6:8, 9, Acts 28:25, Jeremiah 31:31-35, cf Hebrews 10:15).
3. He has the characteristics of God:
 - a) Sovereignty (1 Corinthians 12:11)
 - b) All knowing (1 Corinthians 2:10, 11)
 - c) All powerful (Genesis 1:2)
 - d) Everywhere (Psalm 139:7)

HOLY SPIRIT: MINISTRY IN THE OLD TESTAMENT

1. In the Old Testament, the Holy Spirit did not indwell all believers, since Christ was not yet glorified (John 7:39). Instead, He only came upon some Old Testament saints to perform special functions.
 - a) JOSEPH, a believer who was a prime minister. (Genesis 41:38)
 - b) Believers who were artisans occupied in the construction of the Tabernacle. (Exodus 28:3, 31:3)
 - c) Believers involved in administration. (Numbers 11:17, 25)
 - d) A believer who was both a political and military leader - JOSHUA (Numbers 27:18)

- e) Certain Judges: OTHNIEL (**Judges 3:9, 10**) GIDEON (**Judges 6:34**) JEPHTHAH (**Judges 11:29**) SAMSON (**Judges 13:24, 25, 14:5-6, 15:14**)
- f) Kings of Israel (**1 Samuel 10:9, 10, 16:13**)
- g) DANIEL (**Daniel 4:8, 5:11, 6:3**)
- h) Post exilic rulers (**Zechariah 4:3, 12-14**)

2. Believers in Israel could be disciplined by the removal of the Spirit:

- a) SAUL (**1 Samuel 16:14**)
- b) DAVID (**Psalms 51:11**)

3. A believer could obtain the Holy Spirit by request, but not as an indwelling presence. (**2 Kings 2:9, 10, Luke 11:13**)

4. Jesus gave the Holy Spirit without request to the disciples just before the ascension. Purpose: To sustain them for the ten day interim before the Church Age would begin. (**John 20:22**)

HOLY SPIRIT: MINISTRY TO JESUS CHRIST

1. The ministry of the Spirit in sustaining Jesus Christ was prophesied in the Old Testament. (**Isaiah 11:1-3, 42:1, 61:1-3**)

2. The virgin birth was only possible by the work of the Holy Spirit. **Matthew 1: 18, 20, Psalm 40:6, Hebrews 10:5.**

3. The Holy Spirit was given without measure (constant unhindered filling) to the humanity of Christ. (**John 3:34**)

4. The Holy Spirit was related to the baptism of Jesus. (**Matthew 3:16**)

5. The Holy Spirit sustained Jesus Christ during his earthly ministry. (**Matthew 12:18, 28, Luke 4:14, 15, 18**)

6. The Lord acknowledged the work of the Spirit in his works and miracles. **Matthew 12:8** (Quoting **Isaiah 44:1, 18, 28, Luke 4:14-21.**)

7. The sustaining ministry of the Holy Spirit was withdrawn from the Lord when he bore our sins on the cross. **Matthew 27:46, Psalms 22.**

8. The Holy Spirit had a part in the resurrection of Jesus Christ. (**Romans 8:11, 1 Peter 3:18**)

9. The present ministry of the Holy Spirit to Jesus Christ (**John 7:39, 16:14**)

10. The same sustaining ministry of the Holy Spirit is passed on to us at salvation, and we are commanded to make use of this ministry

11. To grow thereby. **Galatians 4:19, 5:16, Ephesians 3:16, 17, 5:18, Romans 13:14.**

HOLY SPIRIT: MINISTRY IN THE NEW TESTAMENT

1. TO THE UNBELIEVER

a) RESTRAINING (**2 Thessalonians 2:7**)

If unbelievers were unrestrained in the Church Age the one world system which Satan is trying to establish would come. After the rapture of the Church it will come.

b) CONVICTING (**John 16:7-11**)

i) Sin - the barrier which remains in unbelief.

ii) Righteousness - God is totally righteous, man is only relatively righteous and needs God's righteousness for salvation.

iii) Judgment - Satan and all unbelievers are judged.

c) REGENERATION (**John 3:5**)

Man without the spirit cannot understand spiritual things. The Gospel is spiritual, the Holy Spirit makes the gospel a reality to the unbeliever when one believes and is "born again" or regenerated. (1 **Corinthians 2:14**)

2. TO THE BELIEVER AT SALVATION

- a) Regeneration (**John 3:1-16, Titus 3:5**)
- b) Baptism (**Acts 1:5, 1 Corinthians 12:13, Ephesians 4:5**) We are baptized into union with Jesus Christ and become part of the body of Christ. This is not to be confused with the Filling of the Holy Spirit.
- c) Indwelling (**Romans 8:9, 1 Corinthians 6:19, 20**) From salvation on the believer is indwelt by the Spirit.
- d) Sealing (**2 Corinthians 1:22, Ephesians 1:13, 4:30**). This ministry relates to your future with God, the guarantee of eternal security.
- e) Distribution of spiritual gifts (**1 Corinthians 12:11**) Each believer receives a spiritual gift at the point of salvation in order to function in the body of Christ.

3. TO THE BELIEVER AFTER SALVATION (Spirituality)

The Ministry of the Holy Spirit after salvation is the means by which we live the Christian life ordained by God (**Ephesians 2:10, 5:18**)

- a) The Filling of the Holy Spirit (spirituality through confession of sin and surrender of the life). (**1 John 1:9, Ephesians 5:18**)
- b) The character of Jesus Christ is produced by the believer when he is filled with the Spirit. (**Galatians 4:19, 5:22, 23**)
- c) Glorification of Christ (**John 7:39, 16:14, 1 Corinthians 6:19, 20**)
- d) Fulfilment of the Law. (**Romans 8:2-4**)

HOLY SPIRIT: FILLING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

1. The Holy Spirit indwells every believer. We are commanded to allow Him to fill (or fully control) our lives (**Ephesians 5:18**).

2. The filling (controlling) of the Spirit can be broken by:

- a) Grieving the Spirit (**Ephesians 4:30**) - sin, doing something you shouldn't.
- b) Quenching the Spirit (**1 Thessalonians 5:19**) - not doing something you should (like quenching a fire, allowing the flame to go out).

3. The filling (controlling) of the Spirit can be restored by confession of sin and full surrender to do the will of God (**1John 1:9**)

4. The Spirit produces the very character of the Christ in the believer: (**Galatians 4:19, 5:22, 23, Ephesians 3:16, 17, Philippians 1:20, 21, 2 Corinthians 3:3**)

a) The fruit of the Spirit:

- i) **Galatians 5:22-23** - Love, Joy, Peace, Patience, Kindness, Goodness, Faithfulness, Gentleness, Self-control.
- ii) **Romans 14:17** - Righteousness, Peace, Joy.
- iii) **Colossians 3:12-15** - Compassion, Kindness, Humility, Gentleness, Patience, Forgiveness, Love, Peace, Thankfulness.
- iv) **1 Thessalonians 1:3** - Faith, Love, Endurance, Hope.

b) Rejoicing in Christ (**Philippians 3:1, 4:4**).

c) Loving one another (**John 15:12, Romans 12:10, Ephesians 5:2**).

d) Striving for the faith (**Philippians 1:27, Jude 3**).

e) Putting away all sin (**1 Corinthians 5:7, Hebrews 12:1**).

f) Abstaining from all appearances of evil (**1 Thessalonians 5:22**).

g) Submitting to injuries (**1 Corinthians 6:7**).

h) Subduing the temper (**Ephesians 4:26, James 1:19**).

i) Shunning the wicked (**2 Thessalonians 3:6**).

j) Abounding in the works of the Lord (**1 Corinthians 15:58, 1 Thessalonians 4:1**).

k) Showing a good example (**1 Timothy 4:12, 1 Peter 2:12**).

l) Following after that which is good (**Philippians 4:8, 1 Timothy 6:11**).

m) Perfecting holiness (**2 Corinthians 7:1, 2 Timothy 3:17**).

- n) Hating defilement (**Jude 23**).
- o) Overcoming the world. (**1 John 5:4-5**)
- p) Adorning the gospel. (**Philippians 1:27, Titus 2:10**)
- q) Forgiving injuries. (**Romans 12:20**)
- r) Living peaceably with all. (**Romans 12:18, Hebrews 12:14**)
- s) Visiting the afflicted. (**James 1:27**)
- t) Sympathising with others. (**Romans 12:15, 1 Thessalonians 5:14**)
- u) Honouring others. (**Romans 12:10**)
- v) Submitting to authorities. (**Romans 13:1-7**)
- w) Being content. (**Philippians 4:11, Hebrews 13:5**)
- x) Walking worthy of the Lord. (**Colossians 1:10, 1 Thessalonians 2:12**)
- y) Walking in the newness of life. (**Romans 6:4**)
- z) Walking as children of light. (**Ephesians 5:8**)
- aa) Glorifies Christ in his body. (**Philippians 1:20, 21**)
- bb) Christ is at home in his body. (**Ephesians 3:16, 17**)
- cc) A lifestyle which honours God in the presence of men. (**2 Corinthians 3:3**)

5. The filling of the Holy Spirit in every believer only occurs in two dispensations:

- a) Church age **Ephesians 5:18, Galatians 5:22, 23**
- b) Millennium - **Joel 2:28, 29** (characterised by ecstasies)

HOLY SPIRIT – COMFORTER

The Holy Spirit is the Comforter (paraclete = one called alongside to help)

- 1. He abides forever with the saints. (**John 14:16**)
- 2. He dwells in the saints and is known by them. (**John 14:17**)
- 3. He teaches the saints. (**John 14:26**)
- 4. He imparts hope. (**Romans 15:13, Galatians 5:5**)
- 5. He gives us the love of God. (**Romans 5:3-5**)
- 6. He testifies of Christ. (**John 15:26**)
- 7. He communicates joy to the saints. (**Romans 14:17, Galatians 5:22, 1 Thessalonians 1:6**)
- 8. He edifies the church. (**Acts 9:31**)

HOLY SPIRIT: TEACHER

- 1. He is the Spirit of Wisdom. (**Isaiah 11:2, 40:13-14**)
- 2. He reveals the things of God. (**1 Corinthians 10:13**)
- 3. He reveals the things of Christ. (**John 16:14**)
- 4. He guides into all truth. (**John 14:26, 16:13**)
- 5. He enables ministers to teach. (**1 Corinthians 12:8**)
- 6. He teaches the saints to answer persecutors. (**Mark 13:11, Luke 12:12**)
- 7. He directs in the way of godliness. (**Isaiah 30:21, Ezekiel 36:27**)
- 8. He brings the words of Christ to remembrance. (**John 14:26**)

CHRISTIAN LIFE - PRAYER

1. We may know the provision of God but we must communicate with Him in order to obtain this provision.

- a) Prayer is the believer's means of communicating with God.
- b) The Bible is God's way of communicating with man.

2. Promises Involving Prayer

- a) **Matthew 21:22** We should ask believing.
- b) **Matthew 18:19** The power of corporate prayer.
- c) **Psalm 116:1, 2** God is always available to hear our prayer.
- d) **Isaiah 65:24** God will answer while we are yet praying.
- e) **Matthew 7:7** We are commanded to pray.
- f) **John 14:13-14** We can ask for anything in His name.
- g) **Philippians 4:6** The prayer should be with thanksgiving.
- h) **1 Thessalonians 5:17** We should pray without ceasing.
- i) **Hebrews 4:16** We can come boldly to the throne of Grace.

3. Prayer Divided into 4 Segments

- a) Confession of sins (**1 John 1:9**)
- b) Thanksgiving (**1 Thessalonians 5:18**)
- c) Intercession for others. (**Ephesians 6:18**)
- d) Petitions for one's own needs (**Hebrews 4:16**)

4. Power of Prayer

- a) Individual - Elijah and the burnt offering. (**1 Kings 18:36-39**)
- b) Corporate - the release of Peter from prison. (**Acts 12:1-18**)

5. One Prayer that could not be Answered The prayer of our Lord on the Cross. (**Psalm 22:1-18**)

6. To Whom are Prayers Addressed?

- a) Directed to the Father - (**Matthew 6:5-9**)
 - b) In the name of the Son - (**Hebrews 7:25**)
 - c) In the power of the Spirit - (**Romans 8:26-27**)
- The Son (Jesus) and Spirit are interceding for us.

7. Prayers can be Divided into Petition and Desire

- a) Petition - What you ask God for. (e.g. a new car)
- b) Desire - The desire behind the petition. (e.g. happiness because you have a new car).

8. Four Possible Combinations

- a) Petition answered - Desire not answered. (**Psalm 106:15** - The quails of the Exodus generation. (**1 Samuel 8:5**) - A King to reign over Israel.
- b) Petition not answered - Desire answered. (**Genesis 18:23**) The preservation of Sodom. (**2 Corinthians 12:7**) - Removal of the thorn in Paul's side.
- c) Petition answered - Desire answered (**1 Kings 18:36-37**) -Elijah requests fire for the offering. (**Luke 23:42**) -The penitent thief's prayer. Type c) represents the perfect prayer.
- d) Petition not answered -Desire not answered. Type d) unanswered prayer has 9 main reasons which are shown in paragraph 10.

9. Reasons for Unanswered Prayer

- a) Lack of belief. (**Matthew 21:22**)
- b) Selfishness (**James 4:3**)
- c) Unconfessed sin (**Psalm 66:18**)
- d) Lack of compassion (**Proverbs 21:13**)
- e) Pride and self righteousness (**Job 35:12-13**)
- f) Lack of filling of the Spirit (**Ephesians 6:18**)
- g) Lack of obedience (**1 John 3:22**)
- h) Not in the Divine will (**1 John 5:14**)

Most of the reasons for unanswered prayer, is some form of sin in the life, which can be solved by confession of known sins as per paragraph 4 a) under the concept of **1 John 1:9**

10. Intercessory Prayer

- a) This is one of the four factors in a prayer which are:-
- b) Confession of sins.
- c) Thanksgiving
- d) Intercession
- e) Own needs.
- f) The power of intercessory prayer is taught in **(1 Kings 18:42-46)** the principle being found in **(James 5:16-18)**
- g) The power of prevailing prayer is shown in **(Acts 12)**
- h) The prayer for the unbeliever **(Romans 10:1)**
- i) Prayer for an unknown believer **(Colossians 1:3-11)**
- j) Prayer for the known believer **(Ephesians 1:15-23)**

11. The True Lord's Prayer **(John 17)**

- a) That Jesus might be glorified as the Son who has glorified the Father. (v 1 of **Philippians 2:9-11**)
- b) That He might be restored to glory which He had prior to the foundation of the world. (v 5)
- c) For safety of believers from the world and the devil. (v 11, 15)
- d) For the sanctification of believers. (v 17)
- e) For the spiritual unity of believers. (v 21)
- f) That the world might believe. (v 21)
- g) That believers may be with Him in heaven to see and share His glory. (v 24)

CHRIST: HYPOSTATIC UNION

1. Hypostasis means standing together under one essence, two things united under one with no loss or transfer to the other and no change to either.

In the person of Jesus Christ the two natures, divine and human, were inseparably linked with no loss or transfer of properties or attributes, and no mixture or loss of separate identity the union was personal and eternal. The Lord Jesus Christ is still perfectly human and divine

2. See **Isaiah 7:14, Isaiah 9:6, John 1:1-14, Romans 1:2-5, Romans 9:5, Philippians 2:5-11, 1 Timothy 3:16, Hebrews 1:4**
3. The incarnate person of the Lord Jesus Christ included undiminished deity; He remained co equal and co eternal with the father while on earth. As a baby in the cradle he was holding the universe together.
4. The Lord Jesus Christ was also true humanity; body, soul and spirit although due to the virgin birth he had no old sin nature **1 Peter 2:22**
5. The two natures were united without transfer of attributes; the Essence of Deity and humanity were unchanged.
6. No aspect of the divine nature was lacking, although certain attributes were not exercised in line with the Father's plan **Matthew 4:1-10**
7. The union was personal and hypostatic; one essence with two natures.
8. Deity did not indwell humanity or possess it. The union was more than sympathy and harmony, it was unique combining the two natures eternally.
9. Christ had two natures in one person, therefore he could be supremely powerful yet weak at the same time.
 - a) Deity cannot be tempted, humanity can. **Matthew 4:1-10**
 - b) Deity cannot thirst, humanity can **John 19:28**
 - c) Deity is omniscient , humanity learns **Luke 2:40,52**
10. The necessity of the humanity of the Lord Jesus Christ is seen in the following:-
 - a) To be our Saviour he had to be man as God cannot die. **Hebrews 2:14,15, Philippians 2:7,8**
 - b) To be our mediator He had to be equal with both God and man **Job 9:2, 32-33, 1 Timothy 2:5-6**

- c) To be our High Priest He must be a man. **Hebrews 7:4,5 14-28; 10:5, 10-14**
- d) To be a king he must be a man, a Jew in the line of David. **Psalm 89:20-37, 2 Samuel 7:8-16**

11. There are three categories of sayings or actions of the Lord:
 - a) From his deity alone **John 8:58**
 - b) From his humanity alone **John 19:28**
 - c) From his hypostatic union - **John 11:25,26**
12. The uniqueness of the person of the Lord Jesus Christ is a key doctrine to understand for all believers, for it is on this point that the accurate preaching of the gospel rests. **1 Timothy 3:16**
13. The gospel message in one word is Immanuel - God with us. John's testimony on this point **John 1:14**. In Christ we see God's love and favour towards man. As God revealed himself in the Old Testament, so He perfectly reveals himself in the person of the unique person of the universe, the God man the Lord Jesus Christ.

CHRIST: KENOSIS OF CHRIST

1. Kenosis is an expression which means to "empty oneself" or "to make himself of no reputation."
2. Principle of Kenosis:- (**Philippians 2:5-8**)
3. Jesus Christ from eternity past always has been God. As such he is all knowing, he is all powerful, has everlasting life and many other absolute qualities. He was not created because he is eternal.
4. Jesus Christ chose to become a little lower than the angels and took on the form of man.
5. Adam the first man aspired to be God, the second Adam who is God divested himself of his deity (Kenosis) and became man in order to save mankind.
6. During his earthly ministry, rather than using his own absolute power he used the power of the Holy Spirit.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: FASTING

1. The true purpose of fasting is to spend time ordinarily spent in things such as eating and sleeping to prayer and Bible study.
2. Fasting is not only the denial of food, although it often involves it.
3. The Jews fasted on the Day of Atonement (**Leviticus 16:29-31; Numbers 29:7**). Fasting in these passages is covered by the words, "afflict their souls".
4. Fasting with the wrong attitude becomes human works, and therefore is unacceptable to God (**Isaiah 58:3-4, Jeremiah 14:12**).
5. Fasting should always reflect an attitude of humbleness toward God (**Psalm 69:10**).
6. Jesus fasted forty days and forty nights during his temptation (**Matthew 4:2**).
7. When Christians fast it should be a matter between the individual and God (**Matthew 6:16-18**) The fasting Christian should not make a public spectacle.
8. Fasting in the form of extra time in prayer and bible study is beneficial:
 - [a] for major decisions in the Christians' or church's (**Acts 13:2,3**)
 - [b] to remove certain types of demons (**Matthew 17:21; Mark 9:29**)
 - [c] in revival (e.g. the post-war revival in South Korea).

HARMONY

CHRIST ANSWERS PHILIP

Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father? Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works. Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.

RELATIONSHIP WITH GOD THROUGH CHRIST

And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it. If ye love me, keep my commandments.

THE PROMISE OF ANOTHER COMFORTER

And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you. I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you. Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also. At that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you.

NOTES

146 D – CHRIST ANSWERS JUDAS NOT ISCARIOT - JOHN 14:21-31

John 14: 21 He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him. 22 Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world? 23 Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. 24 He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me. 25 These things have I spoken unto you, being yet present with you. 26 But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you. 27 Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. 28 Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I. 29 And now **I have told you** before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye might believe. 30 Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me. 31 But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence.

KEY WORDS

Keepeth	Tereo	Hold, Keep [Present Active Participle]
It is	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Loveth	Agapao	Love [Present Active Participle]
Loveth	Agapao	Love [Present Active Participle]
Loved	Agapao	Love [Future Passive Indicative]
Love	Agapao	Love [Future Active Indicative]
Manifest	Emphanizo	Exhibit, Manifest [Future Active Indicative]
Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Lord	Kurios	God, Lord, Master
How is it	Ginomai	To become something [Perfect Active Indicative]
Manifest	Emphanizo	Manifest, Exhibit [Present Active Indicative]
World	Kosmos	World
Answered	Apokrinomai	Answer [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Man	Tis	Anyone
Love	Agapao	Love [Present Active Subjunctive]
Will keep	Tereo	Keep [Future Active Indicative]
Words	Logos	Word
Father	Pater	Father
Love	Agapao	Love [Future Active Indicative]
Will come	Erchomai	Come [Future Middle Indicative]
Make	Poieo	Make [Future Middle Indicative]
Abode	Mone	Residence, Abode, Mansion
Loveth	Agapao	Love [Present Active Participle]
Keepeth	Tereo	Keep [Present Active Indicative]
Sayings	Logos	Word
Word	Logos	Word
Hear	Akouo	Hear [Present Active Indicative]
Is	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Sent	Pempo	Dispatch, Send [Aorist Active Participle]
Things	Tauta	Things
Spoken	Laleo	Speak [Perfect Active Indicative]
Being present	Meno	Present, Abide [Present Active Participle]
Comforter	Parakletos	Comforter
Which is	-	Not found in the original
Holy	Hagios	Holy
Ghost	Pneuma	Spirit, there is no word in the Koine Greek for Ghost
Will send	Pempa	Send [Future Active Indicative]
Name	Onoma	Name
Teach	Didasko	Teach [Future Active Indicative]

Bring remembrance	to	Hupomimnesko	Put in mind, Bring to remembrance [Future Active Indicative]
Whatsoever		Hos	That
Said		Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Peace		Eirene	Peace
Leave		Aphiemi	Leave [Present Active Indicative]
Give		Didomi	Give [Present Active Indicative]
Giveth		Didomi	Give [Present Active Indicative]
Give		Didomi	Give [Present Active Indicative]
Let not		Me	Not
Heart		Kardia	Heart
Troubled		Tarasso	Trouble, Agitate [Present Passive Imperative]
Afraid		Deiliao	Be Afraid [Present Active Imperative]
Heard		Akouo	Hear [Aorist Active Indicative]
Said		Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Go away		Hupago	Go away [Present Active Indicative]
Come again		Erchomai	Come [Present Middle Indicative]
Loved		Agapao	Love [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Rejoice		Chairo	Rejoice [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Said		Epo	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Go		Poreuomai	Go [Present Middle Indicative]
Greater		Meizon	Greater
Told		Ereo	Say [Perfect Active Indicative]
Come to pass		Ginomai	Become something [Aorist Middle Infinitive]
Come to pass		Ginomai	Become something [Aorist Middle Subjunctive]
Believe		Pistueo	Believe [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Hereafter		Eti	After this
Talk		Laleo	Talk [Future Active Indicative]
Much		Polus	Much
Prince		Archon	Ruler, Prince
World		Kosmos	World
Cometh		Erchomai	Come [Present Middle Indicative]
Hath		Echo	Have and hold [Present Active Indicative]
Nothing		Oudeis	Nothing
Know		Ginosko	Know [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Love		Agapao	Love [Present Active Indicative]
Gave commandment		Entellomai	Give commandment [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Even so		Houto	In this way
Do		Poieo	Do [Present Active Indicative]
Arise		Egeiro	Rise [Present Passive Imperative]
Let us go		Ago	Go [Present Active Subjunctive]

PERFECT TENSE VERB

EREO – TO SAY, SPEAK OR TELL – Occurs 71 times in the New Testament of which 22 times are in the Perfect Tense. It occurs twice in Luke and the Revelation, four times in John, five times in Acts, six times in Hebrews and once in Romans and 2 Corinthians. On 14 occasions the Active Indicative is used while 7 times the Passive Voice mainly in the Participle mood occurs.

Many of the Perfect Tenses of the verb Ereo are tied in with quotations from the Old Testament reinforcing the fact that the Bible is once and for all given to man as something which will last forever and using the truth of the Old Testament to reinforce the eternal nature of what is said. In fact half of the Perfect Tenses in Ereo are intimately tied to the eternal Word of God in the Old Testament.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

It is a good pattern to have a church service start with a call to worship out of the Scriptures. The church service should start and end with the reading of God's Word. It is also good to give encouragement from the Word, showing that where the believer is walking in accordance with the Lord's plan they are totally safe in the Devil's world. It is good to start with two readings, one from the Old Testament and one from the New. The passage we look at now is one of those that provide great encouragement.

In verses 21 - 26 we are challenged as to whether we are living up to the standards using the things that God has given us or are we living as miserable sinners masquerading as saints? What fellowship is most dominant in our life? Do we fellowship with Him on a daily basis or are we regularly out of fellowship with Him?

Paul says that he wishes the mind be in you which is also in Christ Jesus. The Lord was willing to accept the will of the Father in His life right to the end. We have a relationship in Christ. In that relationship we have great responsibility. How are we living is a question that is to be constantly asked of Christians.

Those who are going to have responsibilities in the church either as a pastor or a lady leading a ladies Bible study are giving people the truths and glimpses of the grace of God. You will be giving them the challenge of living worthy of the grace of God. If you are faithful in your teaching of the Word, you will notice that not all like you!

You should not be surprised when people will no longer walk with you. People decided not to walk with the Lord because He challenged them. Success in the ministry does not mean that you have a large congregation. If you judged the Lord's ministry on the basis of numbers you would say that He was not successful, which is blasphemous.

You have the Father with you, are you the Father's joy? We are often not our Father's joy due to sin in our life, or a slackness towards heavenly things, with then our heavenly Father having to discipline us from time to time. We need to write **Hebrews 12:4-17** in the margin of the Bible at this passage. You have not resisted unto blood. You have difficulty because you have forgotten God's warning. When you are chastened, deal with it in the Spirit and talk to God deeply, hold nothing back.

You should give thanks that you are not an illegitimate "make believer"; rather, you are a child, and that is why you feel conviction. The reason that many so called believers can sit in church and not be convicted of sin is that they are "make believers" and not true children of God. No matter how awful your earthly father is your Heavenly Father is wonderful. You do not have to enjoy the suffering you may be going through, but you can learn from it.

If you are dealing with some sin in your life, deal with it before God, so that you might become holy – set apart for the Lord's glory. Be smart about sin and its dangers - Do not go into places where you are easily tempted. Resist evil and that may mean, you do not go to a place where you have fallen before. You fight temptation by avoiding going there – you avoid dangers.

Many believers are stupid at this point. If we wish to resist temptations we avoid known areas of trouble for us; there are places we stop going to. You do not fight your battles against alcoholism in a tavern; you stay home and read to your children, do a weight work out, and pray with your wife! The Lord always prefers to deal with us in a positive way rather than discipline us, but discipline is necessary for wayward children.

Verse 21. He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him. 22. Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world? 23. Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. 24. He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me. 25. These things have I spoken unto you, being yet present with you. 26. But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

In verse 21 we are told about how to get a deeper life. The word hath, is "echo", which means to have and to hold. An example of this is, once you have given a child an Easter egg the child "echos" the egg. In context

you have the Word of God and specifically the Commandments of the Lord, and you are having and holding fast those commandments – they are treasured and held close, as precious words from the Saviour, not onerous orders from a tyrant.

The word for Commandments is the word "entole", and this word means sayings; that is all the doctrines that the Lord has taught; these are not legal demands, but words of love and instruction to keep us safe. To keep is "tereo", which is a military word, which means to set a guard over something. Put all this together and we have then the right attitude to the Lord's words, as we see them as the mind of Christ - **1 Corinthians 2:14**.

Solomon in Proverbs sought after and expressed his God given wisdom. When you open God's Word you need to pursue the doctrines of God's Word. Seek after wisdom with your whole heart and soul and guard it. Protect your soul from evil. Do not let the evil overcome the good.

Verse 23 tells us that if any man loves the Lord, then He will keep the Lord's words as precious to him, and the Father will come and abide with him, but if he that does not keep the Lord's sayings then that man does not love the Lord. There are four repetitions of this principle – it is a vital one is it not!!!

This principle is repeated more often than any other doctrine. By repeating it on a number of occasions the Lord is underlining it. It therefore must be one of the most important of the principles of the Scripture. To reject God's Word, and turn your back on Him, is to prove that you do not consider Him as the only Saviour.

Notice, We are told to love the Father, we are told to love the Son, but no where in Scripture are we told to love the Holy Spirit. The significance of that is that the ministry of the Holy Spirit is to magnify the Son, and glorify Him and the Father, through His plan, and so the Spirit remains in the background. The Holy Spirit never draws attention to Himself. This is why we never pray to the Holy Spirit. We pray through the Son in the power of the Holy Spirit. There are different responsibilities in the Godhead and we are to learn from this.

The Holy Spirit is given to you as your special teacher and your comforter. He is your coach. You heed Him in your soul as you have heeded Christ in the body. As you keep on holding and applying the Word of God you will keep on having fellowship with the Lord and the Holy Spirit will deepen that fellowship. He will make His abode in us, and bring to remembrance those things that the Lord has said.

The challenge for your Christian life - **Ephesians 5:18** - "Be filled with the spirit. In some ways we are to minister, as the Holy Spirit does, not drawing attention to ourselves, but magnifying the Lord Jesus Christ, and encouraging people to draw close in prayer to the Father. The Spirit mentors humility and service.

CHARACTERISTICS OF THE FILLING OF THE SPIRIT

1. In only two dispensations does the filling of the Spirit occur, in (a) Church Age (b) The Millennium. In this topic we contrast the characteristics produced by the filling of the Holy Spirit in these two ages.
2. Church age spirituality is not characterised by ecstasies - Millennial spirituality is characterised by ecstasies. (**Ephesians 5:18**, **Galatians 5:22,23** (Church) **Joel 2:28, 29**) (Millennium).
3. During the Church Age Jesus Christ is absent from the earth and therefore ecstasies is detrimental to the believer; we are working in his power not emoting.
4. While Christ is absent from the earth the believer is His ambassador and as such must produce the very character of Christ which is only possible through the filling of the Spirit. (**Galatians 5:22,23**)
5. The production of the character of Christ in the Millennium is not necessary because Christ is present on the earth.
6. The filling of the Spirit in the Millennium is to appreciate Christ who is present and this is done by way of ecstasies.
7. Ecstasies or feelings are never the criteria for salvation or spirituality in the Church Age.

Verses 25 – 26. In this passage we are reminded of many things, pre-eminently our position and responsibilities, as well as what is the nature of fellowship. Fellowship rests on obedience to the words of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. Let the Holy Spirit be your coach, comforter and inner critic of the thoughts and intents of your heart, rather than your judge. Remember - All prayer must be addressed to the Father, in the name of the Lord, in the power of the Holy Spirit.

The Holy Ghost is in fact the Holy Spirit. There was some academic rivalry between the three universities which supplied the scholars to translate the King James Version of the Bible, with some using Ghost and others Spirit. The word Ghost is a translation of the word Pneuma, which is correctly translated Spirit, thus the Holy Ghost is the Holy Spirit, the third personality in the Trinity.

How do we worship the Spirit? Only when our life is controlled by the Holy Spirit. You do not praise Him with words, you praise Him with deeds, and by walking in the Spirit's power. However you praise both the Father and the Son with both words and deeds. The Holy Spirit is not the object of worship; He is the power for worship. In order to provide a suitable worship service, you need to provide in your service activities that are legitimate and do not give the wrong message about what worship is meant to be.

Verse 27. Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. 28. Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I. 29. And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye might believe. 30. Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me. 31. But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence.

The subject here is peace, "the peace that passes all understanding". As we look at this passage remember the conversation occurs just before they arrive at the Garden of Gethsemane; this is the critical time before Jesus went through the arrest, the trials, and then the Cross. In the final hours before the Cross He spent time with the disciples talking about what they had in their relationship with Him. The Lord's focus was on others not on Himself at this point. Only when He has prepared them, does He turn to His own inner anguish.

In verses 18 - 26 the Lord is talking about a relaxed mental attitude of a person who knows God's Holy Character, who has drawn close to Him, and is dependent on Him. Everything that is in chapter 14 is there to prepare the disciples for the Cross, and the dark days when He is in the tomb after it. This is something that they are going to have to cling to, to carry them through. They will get its full significance after the Resurrection, but I cannot help thinking that some of these words, so well burned into John's heart, were a comfort to them all. The use of the perfect tense is strong – "I have told you", with eternal results....

The Lord teaches them about spiritual peace, and this is what they will need when they look at the Cross. Nothing ever happens by accident with the Lord. The Lord says that even in conditions of catastrophe you can have peace. This is an offer, which these men are not going to take up for a day or so. They are going to get their peace on Sunday morning through the Resurrection.

Can we meet the challenge the Lord gives them, Can we trust His Word ahead of the evidence, of our experience, and ahead of what we are seeing. You can see what is happening physically, you cannot see what is happening spiritually, and what God is preparing to do, for that will become clear in a few hours or days, but its just as real. It is just as real whether you can see it or not. If you are a child of God and walking with Him everything will work out – do you believe that? The worst possible thing that we can think of is going to work out to the glory of God if we are caught up in it within the Plan of God.

"Peace I leave behind with you". The whole construction of the Greek language is that there is a strong contrast between what the Lord says is peace, and what the world considers peace. The peace the Lord gives you, gives peace and confidence whatever the situation, rather than the peace of this world.

What peace are we living under? We trust Him for the most important thing in our life which is salvation, we should be able to trust Him for the more minor ones. We cannot lose the peace, it is there but not utilised. If however a person drops a gift and walks away from it, it is not theirs.

"Let not your heart be troubled", is the present, passive, imperative, of "parasso"; the passive means that the subject receives the action of the verb. Do not receive anxiety, grief, worry, doubt, or fear. Do not let your soul be opened up to anxiety: do not let any negative emotion make its home in your soul.

Earlier in the chapter he says that you should garrison your soul with God's Word to protect it against anxiety. The result will be that you will be strengthened against worry, for trust in God's truth will keep your heart and mind safe.

If you are upset about gossip about you, then you have considered that person's opinion more important than other people's opinions, or God's opinion of you. You have allowed them to upset you. You have opened up your defences and allowed yourself to be attacked. Do not allow the tranquillity of your soul to be upset, for you are to trust God's Word, God's Plan, and God's power to deliver you, rather than things that you can see feel or touch. Do not let the enemy rent space in your head!

"Neither let it be afraid" - present active imperative of "Deiliao", this is a word for a mouse. Do not be like a mouse when you face a crisis. Do not run from danger, rather face it. When we face a crisis it is not a question as to whether it is too big for us, the question to ask is, if it is too great/big for God? It is, of course, never too big for God. It is God's peace that is given to the believer. We must live in the sphere of God's peace; we must trust in His Word and live in it.

You must also trust God's assessment of your life, ahead of the negative things that others can say to attack you. In the ministry it is easy to feel like resigning every few months, but it is required that you tough it out. This does not mean in your own strength, for that isn't all that "tough", it certainly isn't tough enough for the Satanic attacks that can come in ministry. It means, be strong in the Holy Spirit!

The Lord is saying in this passage that you are going to have your peace tested but if you really knew what was happening you would rejoice. Remember, Moses was attacked, and faced at least thirteen major recorded rebellions against his authority.

"The Father is greater than I". What does this mean? Is the Lord God? - Yes He is. Is he less than the Father? No! In his deity he is equal to the Father, but in His humanity He is under the authority of the Father's Plan, and He is obedient to the Plan.

He tells the disciples that they are going to panic at the Cross, because they will think that things are out of control when they are not. If they really knew what was going to happen on the Cross, they would rejoice, but they will only see all that later. Jesus said that He was telling them this in advance so that when they saw these things happen they would believe and know the truth about all He has said to them.

The Lord is going to be arrested in a few hours, but He is not worried at all. The Lord is talking about Satan who is indwelling Judas, and at this point he is the prince of this world, but the Lord is going to defeat him, and defeat the hold of sin and death, that has enabled Satan to rule since the Garden of Eden. In the prayers said at the Garden of Gethsemane, the defeat that mankind experienced at the Garden of Eden is going to start to be reversed. Because of His victory we are now kings/queens, Royal Priests forever in Christ-Jesus, who is, "king of kings and Lord of lords". **1 Peter 2:9-10**. The lying "prince of this world" has no power over us, except to deceive us into thinking he has more power than he has. **2 Corinthians 11:11-15**.

We are as believers, because of our position in Christ-Jesus, superior to Satan. **1 John 4:4**. The prince of this world has no power over us either, except to confuse and depress us if we let him, through sin or ignorance. We must remember where we stand, and where he is, and rejoice in it, and walk in the Holy Spirit's filling power. The Cross is the ultimate demonstration of the love of the Son for the Father, for the Holy Spirit, and for us all.

The Last Supper is concluded. They arise and walk down the stairs into the street. A few hundred metres away Judas is talking to the priests, but they are delayed, and their plans will not work out, because they are all on the wrong side of history.

The Lord is walking calmly, there is no rush to the Garden, nor haste in his prayers, as He is in control. The people who panic are the armed posse that is led by Judas, to the wrong place first – the empty upper room, then he will head across the Valley to the garden, but they are delayed all the way, until the right moment for the arrest to be made in accordance with the Plan. The disciples group will pass the Temple where Josephus tells us that on the gates of the Temple were large vines carved. As they pass by, at the start of the next chapter, Jesus is going to say that He is the vine and they are the branches.

APPLICATION

You must be tenacious about the Word of God; in going after it, and guarding it once you have obtained it.

Christians often fill their minds with garbage, and then they wonder why God's Word does not float to the surface when they get into trouble. If you fill your mind with garbage, you cannot expect the Word of God to be clear in your mind when you need it.

Only those who keep His Word love Him and see Him. If we are not hungry for the Word we do not understand the "Angelic Conflict", and we do not understand how important it is to be clear about doctrine, for Satan can only fool the ignorant or emotional.

You cannot sing, "Oh how I love Jesus", and then deny Him by not thinking on, or obeying His Word.

The Lord is not real to many people because they will not take the Word of God seriously.

As babies desire milk, so we should desire the Word of God, says the Apostle Peter to all young believers in, **1 Peter 2:2**.

The Holy Spirit is quenched or grieved by sin and human good-works schemes. It is therefore of critical importance that confession of sin takes place before a service of worship is commenced, to clear away any sin, and then that the Word is taught, so that any goofy ideas are cleared away and replaced by God's Word.

The Lord demands from us spiritual intelligent worship. This is why He demands from us confession of sin, to clear the heart, and then the teaching of the Word, to teach the truth, so that we might worship Him in Spirit and in truth.

"Others" before self is the standard set for us!

When a crisis occurs you should know that the Lord has provided the doctrines for you, to carry you through the crisis, but you have to have them active in your soul before the crisis, for in the midst of it you cannot learn new things!

The peace of God is based on the Character of God, which gives tremendous stability, whilst the peace of men is unstable, as it is based on each person's unstable character.

DOCTRINES**CHRISTIAN LIFE: OBEDIENCE**

1. Obedience is better than offerings. (**1 Samuel 15:22; Proverbs 21:3; 28:9**). If we are not in God's will, any "worship" we offer is unacceptable.
2. Obedience is something you have to learn. The basic training in obedience has to start in childhood. As it says in (**Exodus 20:12 and Deuteronomy 5:16**) "Honour your father and your mother ". (**Proverbs 4:3, 4; 22:6; 29:15-17; Hebrews 5:8**).
3. Teaching your child obedience is an act of love. (**Proverbs 3:12; 19:18; 23:13-14**).
4. We have to obey those who are in authority over us. (**Exodus 20:12; 22:28; Leviticus 19:3; Deuteronomy 5:16; Romans 13:1-5; Ephesians 6:1-5; Colossians 3:18-22; Titus 3:1**).
5. Those in authority have been put in that position by God. (**Romans 13:1**).
6. Obedience to those in authority is obedience to God. (**Proverbs 24:21; Ephesians 6:7; Colossians 3:23-24; Romans 13:5**).
7. Disobedience to those in authority is disobedience to God. (**Romans 1:30; 13:2**).

8. But when we are ordered to do something that is against God's Will we have to disobey. (**Acts 4:19; 5:40-42**)

9. The fifth commandment (**Exodus 20:12; Deuteronomy 5:16**) is the only commandment with a promise. (**Proverbs 10:17; Ephesians 6:1-3**). Social life in a society is only possible when the people in it have learned to obey.

10. If this commandment is ignored, if the authority of the family is denied or not exercised, society will quickly slide into anarchy. (**Isaiah 3:12; Proverbs 29:21; 30:21-23; Romans 1:30.**)

11. Jesus Christ was perfect in His obedience. (**Luke 2:51; Philippians 2:8**). Examples of the Lord's perfect obedience to the Father's will.

a) The Lord's temptation in the wilderness (**Matthew 4:1-11**), where the Lord resisted the temptation in His humanity to use His divine power outside the Father's will (**Philippians 2:5-8, Hebrews 10:7**)

b) In the Garden of Gethsemane the Lord resisted all temptation to the contrary but set His face firmly to go through with the horror of the cross (**Matthew 26:38-46, Mark 14:34-42, Luke 22:41-44**)

c) During the provocations of the trials the Lord stood firm and resolute. Although He had the power to resist arrest, as shown briefly in (**John 18:6**), He voluntarily went with the troops, even chiding Peter for his sword play (**Luke 22:49-51**). Although abused (**Matthew 26:67-68**), struck (**John 18:22**), scourged (**Matthew 27:26**), mocked and beaten (**Matthew 27:27-31**), and finally crucified the Lord calmly accepted this all as part of the Father's Plan, resisting any temptation to rebel at the injustice, cruelty and callousness of those who perpetrated this evil. Rather He prayed for them, acknowledging to Pilate that all this was part of His role as Saviour (**Luke 23:34, John 18:37**)

d) When miracles were demanded by Herod Antipas (**Luke 23:8-11**) the Lord resisted any temptation to instantly judge that evil man and his court but saying nothing set His face to the cross on which He would bear even the sins of Herod Antipas (**1 John 2:2**)

e) When He stumbled on the road to the cross He did not call on divine strength but Simon of Cyrene had to be pressed into service to carry the cross. (**Matthew 27:32, Luke 23:26**)

f) When reviled by the crowds as He hung on the cross, taunted to do things which He could have done, He resisted all temptation to step down from the cross but stayed there to bear the sins of all. (**Matthew 27:39-44, Mark 15:29-32, Luke 23 :35-39**)

CHRISTIAN LIFE: LOVE

1. Love for God is total appreciation for all He is and has done.

2. Words for love in Greek language

a) eros (sexual love) not used in the New Testament

b) storge (comradeship) not used in New Testament

c) agape (concerned love for others, great esteem for the loved one, reverence, a love that springs from adoration and veneration, and is a love of the will that chooses the loved one and devotes self to them to the exclusion of lesser objects. It may mean a self denying and compassionate devotion to the loved one)

d) phile (a love that embraces and kisses. This love is that of the affections and speaks of friendship and all one will do for a friend).

3. Our Lord makes it clear to Peter in **John 21: 15-19** that he wants Peter to love him with agape love that flows from a deep occupation with the Lord. Agape, as a love of the will, must work out in service of the Lord, and this will express the believers love (agape) for other believers also.

4. Do not love of the things the world has to offer **1 John 2:15-17**.

5. True love of God will always lead to love of the brethren. **1 John 1:3 -11, 1 John 3:1-3, 10, 4:7 -12, 19,**
6. Love is expressed in worship and in service. **1 John 5:1-5.**
7. Love for God will flow and grow from knowledge of his word. **1 Corinthians 2:9.**
8. This deep love will be expressed in witness for the Lord to others, **2 Corinthians 5:14.**
9. God loves every believer with perfect and unchanging love because we are united with His beloved Son.
10. It is also noted that the unbeliever has “agape” love for darkness rather than light **John 3:19**
11. Love for others is an important feature of the Christian life.
12. There are three types of love:-
 - (a) love for God.
 - (b) love for your spouse.
 - (c) love for other members of the human race.
13. It should be noted that only in type (b) is the body involved. The rest involve the soul or soul and spirit only.
14. LOVE FOR GOD
 - (a) Love for God is a response to the love of God. **(Deuteronomy 6:5)**
 - (b) The capacity for this love depends on your maturity. **(Philippians 1:20, 21; Ephesians 3:17-19; 1 John 4:17-18)**
 - (c) For the Church age believer love for God occurs first through the filling of the Spirit. Confession of sin is therefore critically important. **(Ephesians 5:2, cf. 5:18)**
 - (d) Jesus Christ is the initiator of love of God through grace. **(Ephesians 5:25-27; 1 John 4:8-10; 4:19)**
 - (e) The believer loves God using his free will.
 - (f) The believer who does not love Christ is under a special curse and perpetual discipline. **(1 Corinthians 16:22)**
 - (g) Love for God is the true motivator for working for God such as witnessing. **(2 Corinthians 5:14)**
 - (h) This love is initiated by grace and increased in the believer who has a gracious attitude towards God and mankind. **(Daniel 9:4; Psalm 31:23; 119:132; 1 Corinthians 2:9)**
 - (i) Love for God was commanded to all Old Testament saints. **(Deuteronomy 6:5; 10:12; 11:1; 11:13)**
 - (j) Love for God is the basis of all true happiness as well as capacity for loving members of the human race. **(Deuteronomy 30:16)**
 - (k) Love for God provides courage in battle. **(Joshua 23:10-11)**
 - (l) As we see God through his Word it is impossible to love God except through his Word. **(Psalm 119:165-167, 1 Peter 1:8)**
15. LOVE FOR YOUR SPOUSE
 - (a) This is love for a member of the opposite sex designed by God for you in eternity past unless you have the gift of celibacy. **(Song of Solomon 8:6-7)**
 - (b) It is as strong as death and is a provision from God.

- (c) Death does not destroy this love. (**Ecclesiastes 9:5-6**)
- (d) This type of love is exclusive to one person. (**Proverbs 5:18-19**)
- (e) This type of love is protective both in absence (**Song of Solomon 1:13, 4:6**) and in presence. (**Song of Solomon 2:4**) The man is a banner of protection to the woman.
- (f) Love for your spouse illustrates relationships with the Lord. (**Ezekiel 16:8, Ephesians 5:23-33**)
- (g) Mental sins attack all forms of love. (**1 John 5:18**)
- (h) God has set aside time in each life for love. (**Ecclesiastes 3:8**)

16. LOVE FOR OTHERS

- (a) Love for others has great stability and power. (**2 Samuel 1:26, Proverbs 27:9, 10, John 15:13, Galatians 5:4**)
 - (b) Love for others provides pleasant and relaxing environment. (**Romans 13:10, Proverbs 10:12**)
 - (c) Love for others is free from hypocrisy. (**Romans 12:9**)
 - (d) Love for others is outgoing and objective. (**Galatians 5:13, 2 Samuel 1:26**)
 - (e) Love for others promotes orientation to grace. (**Philemon 9-12**)
 - (f) Love for others has enemies and can be destroyed by:-
 - (i) Mental attitude sins. (**Job 19:19, Proverbs 16:28**)
 - (ii) Sins of the tongue. (**Proverbs 17:9**)
 - (iii) National catastrophe. (**Jeremiah 6:21-23, 20:4-6**)
 - (g) Love for others can be counterfeited. (**Proverbs 19:6-7**)
 - (h) Love for others can be removed because of divine discipline. (**Psalms 38:11, 88:18**)
17. We are recipients of Gods love (AGAPE=ultimate concern) through the cross. **1 John 4:10, 19, John 3:16.**
18. We must give out the gospel to all that they might see Gods love towards them **Matthew 28:18-20.**
19. Our attitudes to one another should show Gods love in action. **1 John 4:12, John 13:35.**
20. Love is commanded of all believers towards other believers, **John 13:34, 1John 4:7, 8, Philippians 2:2-8.**
21. This only becomes possible as we grow in Christ, as his word changes our minds giving us the capacity for love. **1 Peter 3:18.** Love is a fruit of the Spirit.
22. Agape love in the believer puts the eternal issues of the other persons life ahead of all else, so that all is done to them with their eternal state in mind. **1 Corinthians 13:1-8.**
23. We show our love towards believers by our practical concern for their spiritual growth and physical welfare. **2 Thessalonians 3:15, James 5:13-16, 1 Timothy 5:1-3, 1 Thessalonians 5:11-24.**
24. We have strength to love others through the word in which we see that we are under the much more love of God: We are in the beloved and the beloved is in us, we are always recipients of His love. **Romans 8:37, John 13:1, 20:2, 21:7,20, 15:9, Ephesians 2:4, 5:2, 25, Revelation 1:5.**

CHRISTIAN LIFE: INDWELLING OF CHRIST

1. The prophecy of the indwelling of the Lord Jesus Christ. (**John 14:18-20**)
2. There is a distinction between the indwelling of the Lord Jesus Christ and the indwelling of the Holy Spirit.
3. The Lord Jesus Christ indwells for fellowship (**Galatians 2:20**), and a sign of the believer's position. (**Romans 8:10**)
4. In contrast the Holy Spirit indwells to teach, guide, direct, empower and correct. (**John 14:26, 16:8-15, Romans 8:11, 1 Corinthians 6:19-20**)
5. The purpose of the indwelling is that the believer may grow in fellowship with the Lord, learning to know and love him more. (**Colossians 1:27, Ephesians 3:17-19**)
6. We fellowship with the Lord within as we allow the Holy Spirit to teach us through the Word. (**John 6:63, 8:31-32, Colossians 3:16**)
7. The indwelling of the Holy Spirit is permanent even though He may be quenched or grieved, but the Lord Jesus Christ can be locked out of the soul by the presence of sin or a negative attitude towards the Word. (**2 Corinthians 13:5**)
8. When the Lord is locked out, the Holy Spirit convicts the believer, the believer is miserable, with the Lord knocking at the door for admission. (**1 John 1:9, Revelation 3:19-20**)

WORLD

1. World under control of Satan:
 - a) ruler of this world (**John 12:31; 14:30; 16:11**)
 - b) god of this world (**2 Corinthians 4:4**)
 - c) he deceives the world (**Revelation 12:9**).
 - d) Satan is filling the world with his propaganda (**1 Timothy 4:1**).
2. Jesus Christ created earth (**Genesis 1:1; Isaiah 45:18**). He gave control to original mankind (**Genesis 1:28**) but man lost it at the fall (**Genesis 3:6**).
3. Sin and spiritual death are the basis of Satan's rule over this world. Therefore, God so loved the world that He gave a Saviour (**John 3:16**), hence Christ as a title in this connection. Christ is the light of the world (**John 8:12; 9:5**).
4. Therefore Christ is the saviour of the world (**John 3:17; 4:42; 1 John 4:14**). The Saviour who gave His life for the world (John 6:33); hence Christ has a title in this connection. Christ is the light of the world (**John 8:12; 9:5**).
5. Therefore Christ has overcome the world (**John 16:33**), so that the believer can overcome the world (**1 John 5:4,5**).
6. Consequently believers in Christ must not love the world (**1 John 2:15,16**). Nor must believers conform to the world (**Romans 12:2**). Worldliness is what you think, which may be demonstrated by what you do.
7. World control by Satan will stop at the Second Advent. However, believers will continue forever (**1 John 2:17**).
8. Also, the Word of God abides forever (**1 Peter 1:23,25**), and is designed to overcome the ruler of this world (**1 John 2:14**). Therefore, not conforming to the world and overcoming the world are accomplished through Bible doctrine, by which God has made foolish the wisdom of the world (**1 Corinthians 1:20; 3:19**).

9. It is therefore of greatest importance that the believer's attitude is based on the Word of God (**Philippians 2:5; 2 Timothy 1:7; Isaiah 26:3,4; Philippians 4:7; 2 Corinthians 10:4,5; 1 Corinthians 2:16; 2 Corinthians 1:5,6,8**).

10. Backsliding is characterised as friendship with the world (**James 4:4**).

PEACE

1. Definition - "eirene" Greek, shalom - Hebrew, pax - Roman. In this context it meant more than just absence of war which is the peace that the world gives. "Peace in our time", was Prime Minister Chamberlain's words before World War 2 broke out. The peace the world gives is an illusion. The Hebrew concept of peace was prosperity and rest, the state of well being of one in the place of God's blessing.

2 There are five concepts of peace:-

[a] Peace on Earth:- The unlimited peace when Jesus Christ establishes his millennial reign on the earth. (**Isaiah 9:6, 7, Isaiah 11:1-12, Matthew 5:9, Luke 2:14**) The Lord is going to establish his peace on earth. This will be the only time in history when men will know peace. The only peace we can have today is no war. There will be wars and rumours of wars until I come. We live in a violent time. Until the cause of violence is removed we will not have peace on earth.

There is a close relationship between God's Word, God's will and God's principles and peace. There is also a correlation in disobedience to God's Word to war disease famine and upset. **Matthew 24:6-8**. A nation can have great peace and prosperity in relation to God's Word. The more people you lead to Christ the more you will have peace and prosperity.

[b] Peace with God:- Which comes when a believer is born again as a result of justification by faith. (**2 Peter 1:1,2, Ephesians 2:14-17, Philippians 4:9**). Reconciliation. Peace with God comes through the Cross, we have been born again - **Romans 5:1-10**. This peace comes from saving faith.

[c] Peace of God:- Which is the peace of believers in their soul and spirit who have cast all their cares on the Lord. (**1 Peter 5:7, Philippians 4:6, 7**). The Spirit filled life. Peace of God is a believer who is living as they should in the filling of the Spirit with their Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. **John 14:27, Colossians 3:15, Hebrews 13:20**

[d] Perfect peace - there is even more peace available for the mature believer, those who keep on walking in the Spirit. The peace of God deepens in the soul - **Galatians 5:22, 1 John 4:17-19 Colossians 3:15,16**. We have the peace that passes all understanding who has matured in the Lord.

In Ephesians 2:14-18 and **Colossians 1:20** we have the strong indication that you are meant to have all forms of peace. If you are at peace with God, (salvation), if you have the peace of God, (filling of the Holy Spirit) and if you have walked with the Lord and matured, (perfect peace), it will be shown in your relationship with others.

There will be no social, cultural or racial hatreds in your soul. You will be relaxed to other believers and be as relaxed as possible to all other people as well. Instead of getting angry with people you will see them as Christ sees them.

[e] National peace - a nation can have peace only in obedience to God's Word. This is shown in **Leviticus 26:6, Luke 14:31, 32, Jeremiah 14:19-21**. Can you have peace in the midst of war? - Yes you can as a Christian. Isaiah 57:19-21. If you want peace you must have peace in your soul by walking in peace in the spirit of holiness. There is no true peace for the wicked at any time.

FEAR

1. Fear is seen in two ways in scripture.

[a] Firstly as a mental attitude sin that is incompatible with our status as children of the most high, the ruler of the universe.

[b] Secondly it is used to describe the correct attitude towards God the Lord for all his creatures.

There is godly fear, awe, and respect for God as God, and there is inappropriate fear, which is the cringing fear of one who believes the other is able to hurt them. This second kind is wrong for us as children of God, for none can harm us without God's permission for we belong to Him.

2. Our occupation with the persons and majesty of God is often spoken of as "fear" in the legitimate sense for believers. **2 Samuel 23:2-3, Nehemiah 5:9, Job 28:28, Psalms 19:9, 34:11-12, 111:10, Proverbs 1:7, 9:10, 10:27, 22:4, Malachi 3:16, Ephesians 5:21.**

3. Fear as a mental attitude sin is spoken of in, **1 Samuel 17:11, 24, Proverbs 29:25.**

4. In God's grace plan for us fear has no place. His plans for us are always divinely good, and any testing situation is for our good. **Romans 8:28.**

5. Fear is an expression of a failure of faith in the plan. **Exodus 14:13-14, Deuteronomy 31:6-8, Joshua 8:1, 1 Chronicles 28:20, Isaiah 41:10, 2 Timothy 1:7.**

6. Spiritual death is one way of describing Satan's kingdom and is the place of the source of fear. **Hebrews 2:14, 15**

7. In spiritual death, Adam was afraid. **Genesis 3:10**, this fear motivated Adam to produce religious activity (fig leaves) and lies. **Genesis 3:7**

8. Salvation removes the basis of fear, which is condemnation from the Justice of God (spiritual death).

9. Spiritual maturity provides freedom from fear. **2 Timothy 1:7; Hebrews 13:6, 1 John 4:18, 1 Corinthians 13:5b**

10. Carnality and any form of religious activity that leads us away from grace and daily obedience to the Word enslaves the believer to Satan through fear. **Galatians 5:1; Romans 8:15**

11. The mature believer is commanded to fear nothing he may suffer in life, for by means of God's grace provision all we ever may need is provided for us. **Revelation 2:10**

12. The baby believer is sustained by believing God's Word, obeying his commands hour by hour to daily life, and rest upon his promises. **Hebrews 4**

13. As we become mature believers we continue with this resting on the promises but in addition to this we are sustained by our understanding / application of entire categories of God's Word - we have then moved beyond the promises to confidence in the very character of God itself.

14. Illustration: A woman who asks every hour, "Do you love me?" needs assurance through many promises, and many actions backing the promises up. Once she gets to truly know her husband, and her love is fully established in him through his faithfulness to her, she has absolute assurance, and doesn't need constant reminders of his love by specific words. She is full of confidence through knowledge of her husband's character.

15. Chapter's 3-6 of Hebrews deal with the falling away from growth and confidence by these believers. The spiritual principle of Chapter 4 is the means of getting them back on target.

16. In **Hebrews 13:6**, we see the objective of the writer, freedom from fear by their daily, moment by moment living the awareness of the love of Christ for them, and the power of Christ available to them.

17. The writers of Scripture identify correctly that when the believer is fearful, he imitates the unbeliever ("cowardly" – **Revelation 21:8**), and that is not right given our great position. **Hebrews 11:27** *"By faith he left Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king, for he endured as seeing Him who is unseen."* This is our standard!

18. Fear is a mental attitude sin that shows our mind has moved away from thinking of the Lord. **1 Samuel 17:11, 24**

19. Fear is a sign of falling back into domination by the "prince of this world". **1 Samuel 18:12,29 21:12 28:20**

20. Absence of fear is a big part of maintaining a dynamic mental attitude. **Hebrews 13:6 11:27**

21. There is only one legitimate fear; it is the fear of failure to enter spiritual maturity. **Hebrews 4:1**

22. Love demands absence of fear. **1 John 4:18**. They are two opposing mental attitudes.

23. Fear is not part of the Divine Plan for the Believer. **2 Timothy 1:7 Exodus 14:13-14 Joshua 8:1 Isaiah 41:10 2 Samuel 1:7**

24. Courage and lack of fear is a sign of mature spiritual status. **Psalms 3:6, Psalm, 56:3 Hebrews 11:27**

25. Fear is the power by which the Evil of Satan rules among mankind. **Hebrews 2:14-15 Genesis 19:30 (Lot) 1 Kings 18:9-14 (Obadiah)**, both Lot and Obadiah show how the failing believer lives in constant fear.

26. Fear is the word used to mean "Occupation with Christ" when related to the attitude of the mature Believer toward Christ. **2 Samuel 23:3 Nehemiah 5:9, 15 Ephesians 5:21 Job 28:28 Psalm 19:9 34:10 Proverbs 1:7 9:10 Proverbs 10:27, 1 Peter 2:17**

ANGELS: SATAN - ADVERSARY

1. SCRIPTURE - Genesis 3; Isaiah 14; Ezekiel 28; Matthew 4; Revelation.

2. BIOGRAPHY

Satan is the most beautiful creature ever to be created by God. He is an angel who rebelled against God before the creation of man (**Isaiah 14:12-15**). Originally he was the covering angel, the personal attendant of Jesus Christ in the very throne room of God. Unlike God, Satan is a created being and as such can only be in one place at any one time. He is attended by a vast number of angels (called demons) who have given him unswerving allegiance. After the creation of man, he tempted Adam and Eve to be as gods and to know good and evil by disobeying God. Satan then became the ruler of this world (**Genesis 3:1-7**). He attacked the human race in many ways prior to the birth of Jesus Christ. Throughout Jesus Christ's life, Satan attacked the Lord. Since Christ's victory at the cross he attacks believers. Satan still has access into heaven where he accuses the brethren. Halfway through the tribulation period Satan is thrown out of heaven (**Revelation 12:7-9**). This causes him to intensify his attack on the human race. During the millennium he is confined to the bottomless pit, allowing a perfect environment on the earth (**Revelation 20:1-3**). After a brief rebellion at the end of the millennium (**Revelation 20:7-10**), Satan is condemned to the eternal lake of fire which was created for the devil and his angels.

3. EVALUATION

Satan is called:

- a) The destroyer (**Revelation 9:11**).
- b) The accuser of the brethren (**Revelation 12:10**).
- c) The adversary (**1 Peter 5:8**).
- d) Beelzebub, prince of devils (**Matthew 12:24**).
- e) The deceiver of the whole world (**Revelation 12:9**).
- f) The great dragon (**Revelation 12:9**).
- g) An enemy (**Matthew 13:28, 29**).
- h) The wicked one (**Matthew 13:19, 38**).
- i) The father of lies (**John 8:44**).
- j) The god of this world (**2 Corinthians 4:4**).
- k) A murderer (**John 8:44**).
- l) The prince of the power of the air (**Ephesians 2:2**).
- m) The ruler of this world (**John 12:31; 14:30**).
- n) The ancient serpent (**Revelation 12:9**).
- o) The tempter (**Matthew 4:3; 1 Thessalonians 3:5**).
- p) A blinder of minds (**2 Corinthians 4:4**).
- q) A roaring lion (**1 Peter 5:8**).

4. PRINCIPLES

- a) Believers are in Christ and therefore in a position of supremacy over Satan (**Romans 8:37**).
- b) Satan was defeated at the cross once and for all (**Colossians 2:14, 15**).
- c) He can therefore only use devices and schemes, trying to convince the believer that he can still win the battle against God.
- d) Satan, through religion, tries to get man to work independently from God.
- e) A Christian out of fellowship can promote principles proposed by Satan (**Matthew 4:8-10; Mark 8:33**).
- f) Satan will use Scripture slightly changed, or added to, to try and confuse believers and lead them astray (**Matthew 4:3-10; cf. Psalm 91:11,12**).
- g) If Satan the adversary is resisted he will flee from you (**James 4:7**).
- h) Knowledge and application of the Scriptures is essential in understanding the wiles of the devil (**Ephesians 6:11**).

HARMONY

JESUS ANSWERS JUDAS NOT ISCARIOT

He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him. Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world? Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me. These things have I spoken unto you, being yet present with you. But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

CHRIST'S RETURN TO THE FATHER

Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I. And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye might believe. Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me. But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence.

146 E – RELATIONSHIP OF BELIEVERS WITH CHRIST - JOHN 15:1-11

John 15:1 I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. 2 Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. 3 Now ye are clean through the word which **I have spoken** unto you. 4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. 5 I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing. 6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. 7 If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. 8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. 9 As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love. 10 If **ye keep** my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love. 11 These things **have I spoken unto** you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.

KEY WORDS

Am	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
True	Alethinos	True
Vine	Ampelos	Vine
Father	Pater	Father
Is	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Husbandman	Georgos	Farmer
Every	Pas	Every
Branch	Klema	Branch, Limb
Beareth	Phero	Carry, Bear [Present Active Participle]
Fruit	Karpos	Fruit
Taketh away	Airo	Lift up , Take away [Present Active Indicative]
Beareth	Phero	Carry, Bear [Present Active Participle]
Purgeth	Kathairo	Prune, Purge [Present Active Indicative]
May bring forth	Phero	Carry, Bear [Present Active Subjunctive]
More	Pleion	More
Are	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Clean	Katharos	Clean
Word	Logos	Word
Spoken	Laleo	Speak [Perfect Active Indicative]
Abide	Meno	Abide [Aorist Active Imperative]
Cannot	Dunamai	Power, Ability [Present Middle Infinitive]
Bear	Phero	Carry, Bear [Present Active Infinitive]
Except	Ean me	If not
Abide	Meno	Abide [Present Active Subjunctive]
No more	Houto	Likewise
Abide	Meno	Abide [Present Active Subjunctive]
Am	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Are	-	Not in the original
Abideth	Meno	Abide [Present Active Participle]
Bringeth Forth	Phero	Carry, Bear [Present Active Indicative]
Much	Polus	Much
Without	Choris	Without
Can	Dunamai	Power, Ability [Present Middle Indicative]
Do	Poieo	Do [Present Active Infinitive]
Nothing	Oudeis	Nothing
Man	Tis	Anyone
Abide	Meno	Abide [Present Active Subjunctive]
Cast forth	Ballo exo	Cast forth [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Withered	Xeraino	Shrivel, Wither [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Men Gather	Sunago	Gather together [Present Active Indicative]
Cast	Ballo	Throw. Cast [Present Active Indicative]
Fire	Pur	Fire
Burned	Kaio	Burn [Present Passive Indicative]

Abide	Meno	Abide [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Words	Rhema	Words, Sayings
Abide	Meno	Abide [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Shall ask	Aiteo	Call for, Request [Aorist Middle Imperative]
Will	Thelo	Please [Present Active Subjunctive]
Shall be done	Ginomai	Come to pass [Future Middle Indicative]
Herein	En touto	In this
Glorified	Doxazo	Glorify [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Bear	Phero	Carry, Bear [Present Active Subjunctive]
Shall be	Ginomai	To become something [Aorist Middle Subjunctive]
Disciples	Mathetes	Disciple
Loved	Agapao	Love [Aorist Active Indicative]
Loved	Agapao	Love [Aorist Active Indicative]
Continue	Meno	Abide [Aorist Active Imperative]
Love	Agape	Love
Keep	Tereo	Keep, Guard [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Shall abide	Meno	Abide [Future Active Indicative]
Have kept	Tereo	Keep, Guard [Perfect Active Indicative]
Abide	Meno	Abide [Present Active Indicative]
Spoken	Laleo	Speak [Perfect Active Indicative]
Joy	Chara	Joy
Might remain	Meno	Abide [Present Active Subjunctive]
Be full	Pleroo	Full [Aorist Passive Subjunctive]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS

LALEO – TO SPEAK - Occurs 298 times in the New Testament with 14 appearances in the Perfect Tense, In John 6:63 Jesus says that the words He “speaks” are spirit and are life. Jesus said that the Jews seek to kill Him, a Man who had “told” them, the truth from God John 8:40. However in John 9:29 the Jews say that they know that God “spoke” to Moses but do not know about Jesus.

TEREO – TO HAVE AND HOLD, KEEP, RESERVE - Occurs 75 times in the New Testament with 9 times in the Perfect Tense.

The first occurrence is John 2:10 at the Marriage in Cana where the Master of the Feast was surprised that the best wine had not been kept. In **John 15:10** and 17:6 the Lord Jesus Christ states that He had always kept the Father’s commandments and His Word.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

INTRODUCTION

Carved round the doorway to the Temple was a great vine with big bunches of grapes, all carved into the stones themselves. This was part of Herod's temple beatification program. This was the one time of the year that the gates of Jerusalem and the temple mount were left open day and night.

As they walk past the gates of the temple, and through the open gates of the city into the Kidron valley, the Lord speaks of the vine of Israel carved on the temple doors and speaks about the temporary replacement of Israel that will occur.

This chapter builds on what the Lord has been saying before, and starts to build a picture of the Church in contrast to the nation Israel. The Lord has been talking about obedience to His Word, and walking in Christ. He now builds on that, and makes it clear that obedience to the Lord in the central aspect of the genuine believer’s life. He speaks of commitment, abiding, and obedience.

The deacons and deaconesses of the early church were involved in the social service function in the church.

Most of their time was spent with people who did not have the peace of God. Just as today the role of counselling is to get such believers back into the Word of God. If the person accepts your counsel in the reading of the Word, the resting in the promises and other spiritual advice, they will grow and be fruitful. Counselling is wasted time if people do not return to daily reading the Word of God.

While we think about this area, some will follow your advice, some will not. Some people like to have problems and do not want to have solutions, as they want to feed on their neurosis, and use it to get attention. The Lord has given to us an offer, "My peace I give to you, not the peace that the world gives". He offers it but it is up to the individual whether he takes it or not.

The reason for a loss of fruitfulness is a lack of obedience to God's Word, a lack of walking with Him. It is the refusal to accept the Scriptures and apply them to the life that ruins most people's lives. Many of these people will be those who will not know the fruit of the Holy Spirit in their lives, and will never know the joy of love, peace, long suffering. Unless people turn up to Bible Class every day its on, you should not do any counselling with them, for unless they obey the Word, you are wasting your time!

There are many people who are saved, but there is something in their life which they will not deal with and therefore will not have the peace or bear fruit. Some people you will have to ask to leave the church, and not come back until there is repentance. These types will not only waste your time, but sow discord amongst the church.

The Lord gives this message as they go out into the darkness of the night a few moments before He is going to be betrayed by evil men. This passage is one that the Arminians use to show that a Christian can lose their salvation and that if you do not do what you are supposed to do you can be cut off and cast into the fire.

As we will see this passage does not negate the message of eternal security that we have seen given above again and again. The Lord says that if a person wishes to be His disciple, then that person must walk in obedience to Him, which in turn enables fellowship to take place, and fruitfulness to occur.

In verse 6 if you are unfruitful, you are cast off, but "as a branch". When a believer is out of fellowship for too long they can come under this extreme form of discipline and be "cast forth as a branch". You are still saved (you still are a branch) but God disciplines you by the sin unto death - **1 John 5**. There is a sin unto death! Refer below to the study of this.

There will be a time when the Lord says that it is enough, you are not staying in the far country any longer. I am bringing you home as you have been out of fellowship for too long. Many believers have died the sin unto death because they went too far into sin without repentance.

If you have to take a funeral, you have to be honest about the people who have died. If you feel that you cannot be honest, or the family will not back you, it is appropriate to ask the family to find someone else to do the internment. This is an area where you cannot afford to lie! The responsibility to the Lord is too great.

At the funeral it is too late for the dead, but not for the living, and if the dead person was an unbeliever, their hope is over, but the attendees hope remains open – but only in relationship in Christ Jesus.

It is like a person being sent off the field in an international sports match in front of the head of state. There have been two clear cases of this in Dr McEwan's ministry experience. The first where a believer went to consult the occult, and out of it received a very aggressive cancer, which killed her well before it normally would have. She went round in her dying days to the local churches warning of the danger of believers getting involved with the occult. She had been cut off the vine, but "as a branch" and taken home to heaven early. She did not lose her salvation, and died knowing the Lord loved her, but that she had gone too far, and so was disqualified from further service upon the earth. Her visit to the Baptist Youth Group in Blockhouse Bay is still recalled by those who heard her, for she appealed to us to not enter into the "Sin Unto Death", but showed great dignity in her acceptance of the Lord's judgment on her, and she helped the living!

In the second an Anglican vicar's wife opposed his Bible teaching ministry in a certain town, and the Lord struck her down with an aggressive cancer, and she was dead before he even knew she had been opposing the teaching of the Word of God, although all the people of the town knew. The people of God in both cases were in godly fear, and there was repentance and blessing for the obedient. The Old Sin Nature may take us to a place where the Lord says, "home you come foolish child"! Let us be fearful lest we transgress beyond the line the Lord has set.

The Lord says that He will not leave us comfortless. He is in the business of comforting His sons and daughters. You were bought with a price, the precious blood of Christ, and you cannot do certain things as Christians without violation of your position and purpose. If you persist in rebellion against the Lord He will say, "stop!" If you are out of fellowship sufficiently long, you can end up dead, but at home in heaven – just robbed of opportunity for further service here!!! God's Plan is for us to bear the fruit of the spirit here, not wander of and waste time and space.

Fruit in the Christian life is important but the only type of fruit that is satisfactory is the fruit of the Holy Spirit. Fruitfulness together with obedience is tied together in John 14 and this is further amplified in John 15 with the concept of "abiding", which Paul will refer to as the "filling of the Holy Spirit". **Ephesians 5:14-21**.

OUTLINE OF JOHN 15

[a] The vine and the branches - 1-8

[b] Christian love under the microscope - 9-17

[c] The world's hatred - 18-25 as an unbeliever they hate the Lord and also hate you.

[d] The Holy Spirit and the believer 26-16:15 the chapter break is in the wrong place.

Verse 1. I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. 2. Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. 3. Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. 4. Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. 5. I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.

In verse 1 the Lord states, "I am the true vine". Herod's workmen had carved the vine into the main entrance to the temple as a symbol of Israel's prosperity and nationhood before God. The Lord is saying here that Israel is not the vine, but He is. They were only ever some of the branches on the vine. Israel however is going to reject the Messiah, and as a result, is going to be cut off, and people who were not the people of God previously, were going to be grafted into the vine. **Romans 11:1-10**.

The nation Israel is going to prove to be unfruitful, and within 6 to 8 hours their leadership is going to reject and totally betray the Messiah, and betray their role as the guardians of Israel's Destiny. They are going to cut Messiah off, as Daniel had prophesied, **Daniel 9:24-27**, and God is going to cut them off the vine and graft in a replacement. But the story is not going to end there. **Romans 11:11-27**.

Others, both Jew and Gentile, by faith in Christ are going to be grafted into the vine. - **Romans 11:1-5**. Paul says all Israel is not lost, but there is a "remnant according to grace", and that will form the start of the Church. As Elijah felt that he was all alone, so many Jewish Christians felt alone as well. God says there are more believers around than you think. They have been grafted back into the vine, which is Christ, and they will be part of the Church, and that will be the vine's identity for the next 1900 years, but the story isn't over.... It is from this time, "believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and you shall be saved", rather than simply trust being the son of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, and keep the Mosaic Law.

In **Romans 11:11** Paul is saying that Israel has now been cast off as a nation, but there are still some Jews are remaining in the true vine through faith in Christ. But there will be a day in the future when in obedience to the Old Testament prophets, they will look again as a nation on Him who they have pierced, **Zechariah 12:10ff**, and will recognise that as a people they crucified their Messiah.

They will return and accept Him as their Saviour and Lord. This will occur during the Tribulation period, before the Lord's Second Advent, and the Second Advent will only occur because they ask Him to return.

If you try and preach the gospel in Tel Aviv or Athens today you will be arrested. It is against the law. The prophecies are still there in the Bible, and we, who believe them, are waiting for Israel to recognise Him. Israel is not a spiritually chosen people today, but they remain under God's special care – that is the only reason they have survived and prospered under such evils we have seen in the last 100 years.

However no nation has ever come back to life after 1900 years of slavery, except Israel, and it has happened in our lifetime. The next phase of world history is about to begin – as we saw in the Olivet Discourse, the clock is ticking now towards the Second Advent!

It is important to recognise that Israel being back in the Land is significant and the fact that she now has control of the place where the Temple stood means we are ready for the last acts of this present age. The Israeli Nation's spiritual leaders are preparing to set up a Temple, they have found or made many things which will allow them to set up the worship again, including the ashes of the red heifer which is needed, and will be used to anoint the new priesthood. As we are near the end time we must give the gospel with vigour.

We need to "buy up the time" and get into full gear now. Target people that they might be confronted with the facts. The King came, and He was rejected, and we remember that at Easter, but He defeats the enemy of mankind, and He is right now King of Kings and Lord of Lords and He is readying himself to return – He is we believe, "at the door". He was rejected and would be killed within hours of this discussion, but it did not stop His plan – for the Plan called for Him to be the sacrifice for our sins. What will be the signs when He comes? These are things we should know. Refer to previous volume 20 – Olivet Discourse.

Isaiah 5:1-7,13-16 - here we have another time in the Old Testament, where the vine was used as an example for Israel, and the prophet made the same point, that their time was short and if they did not follow God's Word they would get disciplined. During Isaiah's life time the Northern Kingdom of Israel went into captivity, and under Jeremiah's ministry 100 years later Judah would also be disciplined.

Mark 12:1-11 reminds us that God owns the vineyard, the branches on the vine are Israel, but the vine is God, and our belonging to the vine depends on our acceptance of the Lord's direction. Stephen gave the history of Israel correctly, and he was stoned to death. **Acts 7:51-60**. God had Israel as His special people, and they were blessed greatly, disobeyed mightily, and were warned and disciplined. At the cutting off of the Messiah, Israel's history was spiritually going to be over for a time as God had forewarned - **Daniel 9:24-27**.

Within 38 years of Messiah being cut off the nation was in dispersion, a similar time spent by the children of Israel in the desert under Moses. During the first siege of Jerusalem in 66AD, the siege was lifted for a time allowing the believing Jews to escape across the Jordan to Pella, before the nation was destroyed. God preserves His people in the midst of crisis, but only as they hear the Word and obey it, as the Church at Jerusalem in late 66 AD did.

Jesus says that He is the true vine and that his Father is the "husband-man" – the owner and the overseer and gardener. We have the context set immediately that the Lord is God. He is the one to whom and through whom all men and women have spiritual life. There is no spiritual life except in Christ Jesus. Unless you are in the vine you cannot bear grapes. There is no spiritual identity or production unless it is in Christ Jesus.

The Father is the owner of the Vine, the farmer, and as such is only interested in the vine that is in His garden. He does not go into the neighbour's place; He only looks after His own.

The Pharisees who were very proud of the lineage, were told by the Lord that their Father was the devil. **John 8:42-44**. We are not related to God the Father, unless we are in Christ Jesus. All other imagined connection is fantasy and fake, and will not save!

This passage is not talking about the "make believers" – the unbelievers. He is not pruning the unbelievers because the unbelievers are never in the vine in the first place, they just think they are, but are in fact on another vine – Satan's fake churches. God is not in the business of making unbelievers nice. He is in the business of saving the unbelievers, as they respond, and then pruning them as believers to make them even more fruitful in Him than they previously believed possible.

From the time that Judas left the upper room to the time when the Lord was arrested Jesus spoke to the disciples only. These are the messages to believers, and we can take heart from them all today.

If you are going to be fruitful there are certain things that are going to happen to you, including the "fellowship of His suffering" (pruning). **Philippians 3:10-11, Colossians 1:24-26, James 5:10, 1 Peter 2:19-21, 4:13**. These are branches in Christ, but are not bearing enough fruit, through unconfessed sin and slackness in their spiritual life. The Lord disciplines those who are not fruitful - **Hebrews 12:5-16**.

The Lord demands holiness of life. Remember, holiness is a separation from the care about the things of this temporary world, and the demand that we pay attention to the things of heaven. If there is unholiness in the Christian's life, then that person will be disciplined. Holiness covers all things; rejection of sin and anything where we are not fully separated to God. He allows us to suffer so that we might be better servants.

These are things that hurt, but we are exercised by them, as we are hurt by a good work out in the gym. If we are corrected by them, we will gain greatly from them spiritually. Pruning a branch means that you are cutting part of it off, so that what remains will be more productive and vigorous.

Separation is commanded from other believers who reject Bible doctrine. (**2 Thessalonians 3:14, 15**) The reason is lest they lead you away from the truth, and stop, or slow your productivity. We are here to be productive, not distracted by things that don't matter eternally, and so anything that stops us doing that, is hated by the Lord.

When we hurt under discipline, we should rejoice, because it shows that we are not illegitimate but true children under discipline. If you do not heed the discipline, if you do not correct your life and get yourself into a position of fruitfulness, then you are in danger of the sin unto death. You are likely to be taken home early to heaven, as you are unproductive, and at a certain point lack of production is fatal....

Jesus did not please Himself; but as a man He received more pressure than we will ever have. The Old Testament says, "The reproaches of Israel ('them') that reproached the Father ('Thee') fell on the Son ('Me') on the cross". **Romans 15:3**. Paul quotes a Messianic Psalm (**Psalm 69:9**). Christ was under maximum pressure when He bore our sins on the cross. Will you abide in Him or will you be rebellious and be cut out from the vine?

In verse 2 He knows when and how to prune His own Vine, and prunes to His will and purpose. If modern vine dressers are very careful to prune their grapes to get the best wine, how much more important is the pruning that God will undertake in the life of the believer. The pruning is tailor made to us so that we might be refined as we accept the Lord's work on us. We should say to the Lord, thank you for what has come, and take it from Him, so that the Lord might be glorified in it. When a person starts learning under pressure they learn in detail and in depth and the fruit is more abundant.

"Airo" - does not mean take away and remove. It means to lift up and take away. In Palestine the grapes did not grow up on upright fences, they had a grape vine which was more a creeper and crept along the ground. At the time of fruit bearing the vines were lifted up and staked high, so that the sun could get to the grapes and so that the foxes could not reach the grapes. It also allowed the sunlight to get on it and make it more fruitful. God is intending His own to be more fruitful. The people who translated the KJV did not know how the grapes grew in the Middle East in those days.

If a branch is not bearing fruit a branch will be lifted up into the sunlight, and away from the little foxes, so that a branch may bear more fruit and the fruit might not be ruined. In verse 6 however if that branch is not fruitful, there will be a time when that branch will be pruned, then if that does not work, the branch will be totally cut off, and cast into the fire. Notice that there are four steps in the Lord's gardening process; firstly the vine is left to draw up the goodness from the stem and root, then it is lifted up to the light to be more fruitful, thirdly the branch will be pruned to be more fruitful, then if it is still not producing, the branch will be removed.

The purpose of all the Lord's gardening work is to bring forth more fruit. When things go wrong in your life and you are under discipline look at what the Lord wants you to learn. Pressure takes you back into the Bible to refine, to prune you and to make you more fruitful. If you are to be more fruitful the Lord will lift you up to be closer to the sun. The heat may be put on you, but there will be blessing in it if you accept it.

Now you are purged he said – "katharizo" - **Ephesians 5:26** - the Word purges you when you get God's Word released in your life and it shows you things in your life which should be changed or altered. As stated in **Romans 12:1-2**, we must be changed by the renewing of our mind. We are cleansed/purified by the Word spoken by the Lord, and note again the perfect tense, reminding us of the permanent results of spiritual growth.

In verses 4-5 the Lord says, "Abide in me and I in you". We cannot provide fruit except in Christ. To abide means to continue in fellowship, to dwell with Him. It is the aorist, active, imperative, you must do this at every point of your life; it is a command for every moment.

He is commanding us to constancy in our walk with the Lord, to permanently live in fellowship with Him. Jesus is saying, "I in you, you in Me", so here we are talking about deep fellowship.

Many Christians lock the Lord out of their soul's close fellowship circle, by ignoring the Lord, His Word, His people, and His fellowship in prayer - **Revelation 3:20**. He wants to eat with us daily at the table of doctrine, and wants us to feed on the Word daily and rejoice in its application into the fabric of our life.

We should be producers of fruit, and therefore imitators of God. The key to all is love; the love the Lord had for us, and our response, which is the love we have for the Lord, expressed in our love for His Word. The fruit of the Spirit should not be confused with the gifts of the Spirit, because the gifts can be falsified by the enemy with his fakes, but the "Fruit of the Spirit" is only produced by the Holy Spirit – Satan doesn't do love, care, and kindness....

Matthew 7:13-23 is extremely important in this subject area. The Lord wants us to be in close fellowship with Him, as it is only in that state that we can produce good fruit for Him. If you are in carnality you are not showing any fruit of the Holy Spirit, for it will be the fruit of the old sin nature, and easily seen as such.

What should we do if we see sin in others lives? - Psalm 15 applies - we should not be associated with evil by speaking badly about someone even when the facts are known. **James 4:11** tells us not to gossip or judge about the sins of others. **Matthew 12:33-37** - we should always be known from wholesome speech and not by gossip. We are here to help not abuse.

If we know a person has been in sin, but confessed, we should be willing to forgive and be kind - **Ephesians 4:1-6, 25-32**. We must be looking for a way of restoring them - **Galatians 6:1, Jude 22, 23**. We are to go to them and attempt to restore them in a spirit of meekness. Our priority must be that we are obedient to God's Word that we may try and heal the wounds in the body of Christ by assisting others to confess their sin. We should go the day we hear about it. We seek divine guidance at dealing with the problem. We must be controlled by the Holy Spirit and concerned for them so that we are ready to help.

We need to abide in the Lord. This means to constantly remain in fellowship with Him. Our fellowship is broken by sin and must be dealt with quickly. Remember **Revelation 3: 19 – 22, and Romans 8:9**. No fellowship = no spiritual fruit! Apart from him we can do nothing that is of any spiritual and eternal value!

Dr Chafer states in his Systematic Theology Volume 4 page 61. "No features of the Christian life are more vital than these; growth and improvement through discipline, measureless efficacy in prayer, that joy which is due to an unbroken fellowship with Christ (cf, **1 John 1:3-4**), and lasting fruit to the glory of God. Fruit is here seen as a product of the vine whose vitality is imparted to the branch. Apart from this flow nothing of real value can be wrought (verse 5). Fruit is the product of the Holy Spirit (**Galatians 5: 22, 23**). The very purpose of union with Christ is that the believer may bring forth fruit unto God. (**Romans 7:4**)."

Verse 6. If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. 7. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. 8. Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. 9. As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love. 10. If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love. 11. These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.

These verses cover an important subject, the subject of the "Sin Unto Death" again. There is a finally fatal alternative to spiritual growth and it is ultimate and final discipline. If the persistently carnal believer refuses to deal with sin and grow in spiritual productivity, the result of being persistently disobedient to the Lord is finally the sin unto death.

Some will sadly always choose the path of least resistance. The broad way that leads to destruction is full of lazy people, and few find the narrow way that leads to life, but this speaks of the great divide between unbelievers and believers.

The sad fact behind this passage on growth is that so many believers behave once saved like their unbelieving neighbours; they become slack and lazy regarding spiritual things and so miss the rewards that are theirs for advancing along the narrow road.

They are saved by being on the road, but they lose all blessing and reward, because they do not take advantage of their great position and live up to their great responsibility. They wander off the road, or sit down on it, rather than walking to the destination ahead of them.

In verse 6 it says that if they abide not, this implies, as it is a second class condition, that they were a living branch, but are no longer one. They have died by lack of feeding, and the branch is become dry and brittle and rotten, and needs removal before other branches get affected by it. The process the divine gardener goes through is spelt out clearly in this chapter. As we have seen, He prunes, he lifts up the vine to the light, and then He prunes again.

By pruning, under the pressures of life that the Lord allows to enter in, people are changed, as the Lord then removes some things from their lives, so that they can produce more fruit. If they still fail to produce fruit they are pruned right the way back to the main stem.

If the branch ceases to take up the sap and produce, it is cut off right at the stem, and it produces nothing further, and another branch will grow in its place on the vine. It's time in the grape vine upon the earth is over prematurely! Pruning is not a cruel process, for its focus is always the best production for the grape vine, and for that branch in particular. It is a thoughtful process on the part of the gardener.

You cannot abide with Him and ignore the Lord in your daily life. The Lord will prune initially but if you persist in disobedience, and refuse to take up the sap (feeding on his Word), you will be further pruned, and then finally cut out and you will leave this life under maximum discipline. You are cut off as a branch and men gather and burn the branches. This is a picture of final discipline.

Unbelievers are merciless against the fallen believer, but the Lord is merciful, thoughtful and focused on our spiritual growth and eternal rewards, but there is a limit to His patience with us, if we persist in evil/sin or slackness. The world will always mock the Christian who goes out of life this way, but God is not mocking us, just dealing with us the only way He can when we wont do what is required. Sometimes unbelievers or even Satan, are even allowed to execute the sin unto death on the persistently disobedient believer – but there is no malice on the Lord's part, and their end is always designed by the Lord to encourage repentance and even winning eternal reward in the process. **1 Timothy 1:18-20**.

The reason for the "sin unto death" is due to persistent serious disobedience that is actually dangerous to others spiritual life, and where the person must be removed from the earth before too many others are hurt, and so the Lord removes the person early from their life journey before they have achieved what they otherwise could have. Add to the doctrinal analysis of this subject **John 15:1-11** and **Philippians 3:3-19**. The sin unto death is a result of "hardness of heart" on the part of the errant believer.

The important point to stress on this subject is that the believer needs to work hard in disobedience to get to this place, for God is gracious and long suffering. The way out from under all such discipline is clear in Scripture; it is sitting with the truth about their unproductive and disobedient life-style choices, and then thorough confession of sin - **1 John 1:9**, **James 4:4-8**, **2 Timothy 2:24-26**.

A good example of this is the Corinthian pervert. **1 Corinthians 5:1-5**, which describes the sin compared with **2 Corinthians 2:1-11**, where Paul tells the Corinthian church to let the repentant believer back into the church, for he has rejected the perversion now, and has his life right before God, and so the church is to come in behind and support them back to the productive path under the principle expressed in **Galatians 6:1**.

Another example is the Corinthians who come habitually to the Lord's Supper in an unworthy manner, and some of them have died, to stop their blasphemous behaviour hurting others. **1 Corinthians 11:17-24**. The person who gossips can come under the sin unto death even quicker than the blasphemer and the adulterer. The church of Laodicea was placed under such condemnation in **Revelation 3:14-22**, with the removal of their lampstand, representing the corporate sin unto death because of their sins. This church did cease to exist and the site is empty today, and was empty from around the fourth century.

Remember, while there is a sin unto death, there is "no condemnation" that affects their eternal life, to the believer who is in Christ Jesus. The born again believer can be executed under the sin unto death but they are still a branch. **Romans 7:23 - 8:1**, **2 Timothy 2:11-13**. The sin unto death robs the errant believer of opportunity to serve the Lord, by reducing their time on earth, but their eternal destiny is still heaven.

The contrast is seen in verse 7, and is the positive believer, who is doing what the Lord wants her/him to do. You can be powerless and under the sin unto death, or you can be powerful through Holy Spirit empowered and biblically saturated living. The Lord is starkly making the choice clear, and it is a choice that we all face daily. Most Christians fail to live up to the clear biblical standard of verse 7.

The Lord compared people to sheep, which are about the dumbest of animals as they have been bred for wool or meat, not brains over the last 300 years. Modern sheep are like lemmings, they get led astray very easily unless they keep their eyes fixed upon their shepherd, or are guided by the sheep dog. They are a valuable animal, providing wool, milk, meat, but even in the ancient world, they were a vulnerable animal, with no personal protection against the wolf, the wild dog, or the thief; they are foolish, they need protection and guidance.

Note the remedy for even the dumbest sheep! Keep close to the shepherd! "Ask whatever you will from the Shepherd, and it will be done unto you". If you get your will in line with the Shepherd's will, you will be kept safe, and you will receive what you require. Let His Word abide in you. He will then educate your will, and you will want what He wants in your life. Your thinking must be the thinking of God. How is this possible? By heeding the teaching ministry of the Holy Spirit so that your mind is transformed. **Isaiah 55:6-11**.

Verse 8. The results of a powerful prayer that is in accord with the Lord's will, is that the Lord will be glorified, and you will be spiritually fruitful, and as such you really will be functioning as a disciple of Christ. Discipleship is abiding in Him, and His Word abiding in you, you being obedient to the Word so that what you pray for is powerful, and your life brings glory to God. This is why we are left here! There is no other reason other than that we glorify the Lord while we are here on earth in the midst of the devil's deceptive nonsense.

Verse 9. The appeal of the Lord to the believers is one of love. As the Father has loved Him so He loves us. He challenges us to show our love for Him through our obedience to his clear commands, which are not onerous! This is the issue for the believer, and that is why the sin unto death is in place for the believer who insults the love of God in a manner that requires their permanent removal from the earth earlier than they could have been here.

When you are no longer living the life of Christ, you are sinning against God, for you are failing to fulfil the purpose flowing from your salvation. You are insulting his love and provision by refusing to use it! He has loved you this much, what is your response to Him? Dedicate yourself to God's Word and apply it into the very fabric of your daily life.

Verse 10. Jesus words are direct, and there is no doubt about their meaning is there? "If you obey My commandments, you shall abide in My love, even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in His love. Christ's love for you is constant, and your expression of your love for him, through your obedience to his Word, should also be constant.

You see the love of the Lord for you on the Cross, you read of it in his Holy Word, and the Holy Spirit enlivens it to your soul every day. Are you going to abide in this love? This is the question for us all daily.

Verse 11. There is a general lack of joy in most local churches, and this ought not to be the case. Christians come into church, sing a number of Scripture in Song choruses, and leave feeling better for a while, but often not tackling the real problem in their life. It is not unlike a depressed pagan putting on her/his favourite music and feeling better with the world for a while. The superficial believers leave the church saying how great it is being a Christian, and then they are miserable again within a few short hours.

Joy is a fruit of the Holy Spirit. It is the relaxed contentment of being in the Father's will and being in a relationship with your Creator. Jesus says, "My joy I leave with you". If there is no joy in your life go back to **John 15:6-10** and see why that is the case, for it is not Jesus will for your life – He wants us to have "life and live it more abundantly". **John 10:10**. Receive the pruning and rejoice in the increased productivity that it will provide for you.

APPLICATION

This chapter asks the question, will you be fruitful? You will only be fruitful if you are resting in Him and His power.

Sadly most of the believers in the Lord Jesus Christ will not experience the peace of God which passes all understanding, nor will they know the joy of fellowship and productivity that is for those who live in Him through each day.

We are delivered for a purpose. He wants us to go into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature, to the Jew first and then the Gentiles.

Remember the people of God, Israel, that though they have been cut off; they still have a future, and will be grafted back into the vine in a future day, and we are to work towards that day by our own Spirit filled work.

When people do accept the gospel, command them to be fruitful and obedient. Remember to follow the advice yourself.

If you are in the vine the Lord says that there is a relationship with the Father and that relationship is one focused on growth. Are you going to be fruitful in Him and abide in Him or not?

You are grafted into the vine by faith in Christ, and you are there to be fruitful. Are you going to be fruitful or are you going to be removed from the vine by discipline?

If you are not fellowshiping with the Lord through His Word you will have no fellowship with Him and you will have no fruit in your life.

You are either abiding in Him and He is in you and are remembering that without Him you can do nothing. You are either living in a place of power or you are trying to go it alone.

If you go alone you will achieve nothing, you will do nothing of value.

DOCTRINE

CHRISTIAN LIFE: FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT

1. The filling of the Holy Spirit produces fruit in the life (love, joy, peace, long suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance). (**Galatians 5:22-23**) Note that "fruit" is singular - all the characters are produced at the same time in the filling of the Holy Spirit.

2. The Fruit of the Spirit is also listed as follows:-

Romans 14:17 - Righteousness, Peace, Joy

Colossians 3:12-15 - Compassion, Kindness, Humility, Gentleness, Patience, Forgiveness, Love, Peace, Thankfulness

1Thessalonians 1:3 - Faith, Love, Endurance, Hope

2. In principle, it is the imitation of God (**Ephesians 5:1**). The reason we are left on the earth after salvation is to produce fruit. (**John 15:16, Philippians 4:17**)

3. We produce fruit by hearing the word (**Mark 4:20-28**) and applying it to our lives. (**Hebrews 4:2**)

4. Failure to grow and produce fruit means divine discipline even to the point of the believer's early departure from this life. (**Luke 13:6-9 John 15:2**)

5. Rewards in eternity are distributed on the basis of faithful production. (**1 Corinthians 3:10-15, 2 Corinthians 5:10**)

6. Fruit is not to be confused with spiritual gifts. These are listed in (**Romans 12:6-8; 15:18-19; 1Corinthians 12:8,10; 1Corinthians 12:28-30; Ephesians 4:1**) and other places.

7. One can know Christians by their fruit (**Matthew 7:16-20; Luke 6:43-45; 1John 3:10 & 11; John 15:8**) especially by their love (**John 13:35**) but not by their gifts, as Satan can imitate them (**2Thessalonians 2:9**).

8. Three natural fruits represent some of the facets of the fruit of the Spirit: Apples - love, Grapes - Joy, Pomegranates - Peace.

9. In Galatians 5: 22-23 the fruit of the Spirit is divided into three sections

[a] Love, Joy and Peace towards God;

[b] Patience, Goodness and Kindness towards others;

[c] Faithfulness, Gentleness and Self-control towards oneself.

SIN: OLD SIN NATURE - THE FRUIT OF

1. The fruit of the old sin nature falls under four categories

- [a] Sensual
- [b] Religious,
- [c] Social
- [d] Personal

2. SENSUAL

- [i] fornication - porneia - illicit sexual activity or any sexual activity other than with your partner.
- [ii] uncleanness - akatharsia - all acts of indecency and uncleanness that shock people, this includes abnormal sexual acts
- [iii] lasciviousness - aselgeia - unrestrained lust - people who are having sex for their own personal gratification, treating other people as sexual objects for their pleasure. Paul recognises that we are tempted in all these areas. Matthew points out that it is not only the doing of these acts but the thinking of these acts which are sins.

3. RELIGIOUS

- [i] idolatry - eidoltria - worship of things other than God
- [ii] witchcraft - pharmakeia - this involved magic, astrology, séances and sorcery.
- [iii] hatred - echtros - this is unrestrained rage without a reason. You get so angry that no one can talk to you at all.
- [iv] strife - eris - contentiousness - this is argumentation in regard to Bible teaching and spiritual matters.

4. SOCIAL

[i] jealousy - zelos - a bitter hatred towards another person who has something that you want. This is the father of all the other sins.

[ii] wrath - thermos - this is getting hot headed or flaring up. If the person does not control the power of a hot temper they are under the power of the old sin nature and not the Holy Spirit. If you get this type of trouble at a church meeting you turn to the Word of God.

[iii] seditions - - this is faction forming

[iv] heresies - this is one step forward from seditions and is a person who wishes to build on the factions. An example would be the KJV group. By separating on the basis of the KJV alone you have fallen into far more evil than is present in variations in the versions.

[v] evil - this is tied into jealousy eating away at the souls of people who harbour resentment.

5. PERSONAL

[i] drunkenness - methai - drinking alcohol to excess is not a sickness it is a sin. It is an inherited weakness, if your father is an alcoholic you should not touch alcohol at all because it is a weakness in the family. Avoid places where you could be tempted. If you have a weakness towards alcoholism you must deal with it.

[ii] revellings - jomoi - which means hell raising, a person who cannot bear silence but has to be drowned in noise all the time. Their life is empty and has no purpose but as long as they party vigorously and run from function to function they do not have to worry about their sin and the pointlessness of their life. When you are tempted to sin think about the Lord. Paul now adds and such like which means that if he has not hit their particular weakness they should fill in the blanks.

We all have weaknesses and unless you are on guard you fall every time. You have to ascertain your weakness and set your guard against it. God's way is to walk in the Spirit that is the way to deal with it.

SIN: SIN UNTO DEATH

1. There is a sin unto death (**1 John 5:16, 17, 1 Corinthians 11 :31,32**)
2. The sin unto death is the physical death of a believer, where ultimate discipline is administered to the Christian due to unconfessed sin of a serious nature.
3. Confession of sin under the concept of **1 John 1:9** is the way to forgiveness.
4. Examples of sin unto death:-
 - (a) The Corinthian Pervert - (**1 Corinthians 5**)
 - (b) The Corinthians who habitually came to the Lord's table in an unworthy manner. (**1 Corinthians 11:27-32**)
 - (c) Moses (**Deuteronomy 32:48-52**)
 - (d) Achan (**Joshua 7:16-26**)
 - (e) Ananias and Sapphira (**Acts 5: 1 -11**)
5. Whilst there is a sin unto death there is no condemnation to them in Christ Jesus - all believers (**Romans 8:1**).
6. The effect of the sin unto death is to reduce the time which a believer can spend on earth accumulating good of eternal worth. The gold, silver and precious stones of **1 Corinthians 3:11-15**.

CHRIST – BRANCH: A PICTURE OF CHRIST

1. Christ is known as the branch in four ways, which corresponds to the four gospels.
 - a) MATTHEW is the gospel with emphasis on Jesus Christ as the King of Israel. Jesus is called the BRANCH OF DAVID (**Isaiah 11:1; Jeremiah. 23;5; Jeremiah. 33:15**) and as such is shown as the coming King of Israel which will be fulfilled in the Millennium
 - b) MARK is the gospel with emphasis on Jesus Christ as the Suffering Servant. Jesus is called MY SERVANT THE BRANCH (**Zechariah. 3:8**) which he fulfilled during the incarnation at the first advent. (Isaiah 53)
 - c) LUKE is the gospel with emphasis on Jesus Christ as the Perfect Man. Jesus is called THE MAN WHOSE NAME IS THE BRANCH (**Zechariah 6:12**) specifically referring to His reign on the earth during the Millennium.
 - d) JOHN is the gospel with emphasis on Jesus Christ as God. Jesus is called THE BRANCH OF THE LORD (Isaiah 4:2) and refers to Jesus as God with us-Emmanuel. (**Isaiah 7:14**)
2. THE FALSE BRANCH -At Christmas it is common practice in Europe to kiss under the mistletoe as a form of reconciliation. The mistletoe is a parasite which is called a branch and is a false parody on the reconciliation provided by the true BRANCH.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: SPIRITUALITY

1. All Christians have the Holy Spirit indwelling them. When we allow Him to control our lives, we are said to be "filled with the Spirit" or "walking in the Spirit".
2. The filling of the Holy Spirit can be lost by
 - a) Grieving the Spirit - by sin
 - b) Quenching the Spirit - by not submitting to His leading
 - c) This is called being carnal, or controlled by the flesh, the old sin nature.
3. The filling of the Holy Spirit can be regained by
 - a) Confessing sin (1 John 1:9)

- b) Surrendering your life to God (**Romans 12:1-2**)
- c) This is called being spiritual, or controlled by the Holy Spirit.

4. Only the Holy Spirit in us can produce good works acceptable to God - anything in our own strength is unacceptable (**Romans 8:8-9, 1 Corinthians 3:10-15**)

5. The spiritual believer

- a) Imitates God. (**Ephesians 5:1, 1 John 3:9**)
- b) To glorify Christ. (**John 7:39, John 16:14**)
- c) Fulfills the Law. (**Romans 8:2-4, Romans 13:8**)

6. In the Bible the human race is divided in three Categories:-

[a] Natural Man - A person born physically alive, but not regenerated. He may be highly sophisticated, civilised, gentle and kind, but is completely ignorant of any spiritual phenomena. (**1 Corinthians 2:14**) Equivalent to the cold person in the church in Laodicea.

[b] Carnal Man - A person regenerated or born again but living his life under the power of his old sin nature. Prolonged activity in this area produces a Christian who is still a baby. (**1 Corinthians 3:1-4**). Equivalent to the lukewarm person in the church of Laodicea.

[c] Spiritual Man - A person regenerated and living generally in the power of the Holy Spirit. He discerns the difference between the things of God and man. (**1 Corinthians 2:11-13**) He has fellowship with God in his daily life. (**Ephesians 5:18-20**) Equivalent to the hot person in the church of Laodicea.

7. Carnality

[a] The believer possesses an Old Sin Nature after salvation (**1 John 1:8, Romans 7:14,15**).

[b]. The Old Sin Nature is desperately wicked (**Jeremiah 17:9**).

[c]. The believer under the control of the Old Sin Nature is called carnal (**1 Corinthians 3:1-3, Romans 7:14**).

[d]. The Old Sin Nature frustrates bona fide production in the life of the believer (**Romans 7:15**).

[e]. The Old Sin Nature is acquired at the point of physical birth (**Psalms 51:5**).

[f]. We are therefore considered spiritually dead at the point of physical birth (**Romans 5:12**).

[g]. The Old Sin Nature has several facets: areas of weakness produces sins, areas of strength produces human good. It has trends towards asceticism or lasciviousness. In many cases asceticism is considered to be spirituality.

[h] The Old Sin Nature is not found in the resurrection body.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: SEPARATION

1. Believers are instructed to be separated from habitually carnal believers. (**1 Corinthians 5:10, 11**)

2. Separation is ordered from apostate religious organisations. (**2 Corinthians 6:17**)

3. Separation is commanded from unbelievers where scripture is compromised by the relationship or marriage, business partners. (**2 Corinthians 6:14 ff**)

4. Separation is commanded from the human viewpoint. (**Romans 12:2, Romans 16:17, 18**)

5. Separation is commanded from pseudo spirituality. (**Romans 16:17, 18**)

6. Separation is commanded from those who seek pleasure in fast living - pursuit of parties, immoral situations. (**1 Peter 4:4**)

7. Separation is commanded from other believers who reject Bible doctrine. (**2 Thessalonians 3:14, 15**)

CHRISTIAN LIFE - SERVICE

1. Our duty is to surrender our entire lives to God. (**Romans. 12:1**)
2. Willingness is essential. **Judges 5:2, 8:25, Isaiah 1:19, 2 Corinthians 8:3**
3. Service in the big things requires by faithfulness in the small things.
4. Monotony and difficulties are transformed into the opportunities with the correct attitude (**Matthew 6:33**)
5. Everything we do should be "as unto the Lord" (**Colossians 3:17**)
6. Service to Christ is acceptable to God and approved of men (**Romans 14:18**)
7. Our work should be completed. **John 4:34, 17:4, Acts 20:24, 2 Timothy 4:7**
8. The example of Christ. **Matthew 20:28, Luke 22:27, Philippians 2:7**
9. Qualities of our service:-
 - a) It is demanded. **Hebrews 12:28**
 - b) It should be immediate. **Matthew 21:28**
 - c) It is abundant. **1 Corinthians 15:58**
 - d) It is according to ability. **Matthew 25:22, Luke 12:48**
 - e) It is in co-operation with God. **2 Corinthians 6:1**
 - f) Must be exclusive (**Luke 16:13**)
 - g) In the power of the spirit (**Romans 1:9**)
 - h) Undertaken in Godly fear (**Hebrews. 12:28**)
 - i) Motivated by love (**Galatians. 5:13**)
10. It is :-
 - a) Following Christ (**John 12:26**)
 - b) For him whom all Christians serve (**Colossians 3;24**)
 - c) Service to God. (**Acts 27:23**)
11. It requires:-
 - a) Turning from idols (**1 Thessalonians. 1:9**)
 - b) Fasting and prayer (**Luke 2:37**)
 - c) Ministry of the Word (**Acts 6:1-4**)
12. Benefits of Service:-
 - a) It glorifies God. **Matthew 5:16, John 15:8**
 - b) It enriches life. **1 Timothy 6:18-19**
 - c) It gives a pattern for imitation. **Titus 2:7**
 - d) It encourages others in their tasks. **Hebrews 10:24**
 - e) It shows neighbourliness. **Luke 10:36-37**
 - f) It lightens life's burdens. **Galatians 6:2,16**
 - g) It demonstrates love. **John 21:15-17**
 - h) It demonstrates faith. **James 2:17-18, 1 Peter 2:12**
 - i) It is Christlike. **John 13:12-15**
13. The model servant (**Genesis 24**)
 - a) Does not pre-empt his master. (v2-9) We should wait upon the Lord and not run ahead of time.
 - b) Goes where he is sent (v4,10). We should be in the geographical will of God.
 - c) Does nothing else. God has specific tasks for every believer to perform. We should concentrate on our own area and not get sidetracked.
 - d) Is prayerful and thankful. We should always realise where our power comes from and not get proud when we have spiritual blessings and prosperity.
 - e) Is keen to succeed (v 17-18, 21). We should be keen to evangelise. (Romans 1:14-16)

- f) Speaks not of himself but of his master. Who and what we are is not important, who and what Christ is of the greatest importance. (v 22, 34-36)
- g) Presents the true issue and requires a clear decision. (v49) We should present the gospel and other doctrine clearly and expect results.

HARMONY

RELATIONSHIP OF BELIEVERS WITH CHRIST

I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing. If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

GLORIFICATION OF GOD

Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love. If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love. These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.

146 F – RELATIONSHIP OF BELIEVERS TO EACH OTHER - JOHN 15:12-17

John 15:12 This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you. 13 Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. 14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. 15 Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you. 16 Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you. 17 These things I command you, that ye love one another.

KEY WORDS

Is	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Commandment	Entole	Commandment, Injunction
Love	Agapao	Love [Present Active Subjunctive]
One Another	Allelon	Each other
Have loved	Agapao	Love [Aorist Active Indicative]
Greater	Meizon	Greater
Love	Agape	Love
Hath	Echo	Have and hold [Present Active Indicative]
No man	Oudeis	No one
Man	Tis	Person
Lay down	Tithemi	Give, Lay down [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Life	Psuche	Soul
Friends	Philos	Friend
Are	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Do	Poieo	Do [Present Active Subjunctive]
Whatsoever	Hosos	Those things
Command	Entellomai	Command [Present Middle Indicative]
Henceforth	Ouketi	No longer, Henceforth

Call	Lego	Call [Present Active Indicative]
Servants	Doulos	Slave
Knoweth	Eido	Know [Perfect Active Indicative]
Lord	Kurios	Lord, Master
Doeth	Poieo	Do [Present Active Indicative]
Called	Ereo	Call [Perfect Active Indicative]
All things	Pas	Whole
Heard	Akouo	Hear [Aorist Active Indicative]
Father	Pater	Father
Made known	Gnorizo	Make known [Aorist Active Indicative]
Have chosen	Ekleptomai	Choose [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Have chosen	Ekleptomai	Choose [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Ordained	Tithemi	Appoint, Ordain [Aorist Active Indicative]
Should go	Hupago	Go [Present Active Subjunctive]
Bring forth	Phero	Carry, Bring forth [Present Active Subjunctive]
Fruit	Karpos	Fruit
Should remain	Meno	Remain [Present Active Subjunctive]
Shall ask	Aiteo	Ask, Desire [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Name	Onoma	Name
Give	Didomi	Give [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Command	Entellomai	Command [Present Middle Indicative]
Love	Agapao	Love [Present Active Subjunctive]

PERFECT TENSE VERB

EREO – TO SAY, SPEAK OR TELL – Occurs 71 times in the New Testament of which 22 times are in the Perfect Tense. It occurs twice in Luke and the Revelation, four times in John, five times in Acts, six times in Hebrews and once in Romans and 2 Corinthians.

On 14 occasions the Active Indicative is used while 7 times the Passive Voice mainly in the Participle mood occurs. Many of the Perfect Tenses of the verb Ereo are tied in with quotations from the Old Testament reinforcing the fact that the Bible is once and for all given to man as something which will last forever and using the truth of the Old Testament to reinforce the eternal nature of what is said. In fact half of the Perfect Tenses in Ereo are intimately tied to the eternal word of God in the Old Testament

OIDA, EIDO – TO KNOW – Occurs 251 times in the Perfect Tense in the New Testament and is by far the largest with Grapho next at 96 occurrences. Because of the mixture of “knows” and “don’t knows” and different characters ranging from the Trinity, through the Disciples of Christ, Religious Leaders, and even to demons the review of this verb is given in each verse it occurs.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

Verse 12. This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you. 13. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. 14. Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. 15. Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you. 16. Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you. 17. These things I command you, that ye love one another.

We are told by the Lord to keep awake and make sure we know what is happening around us. The call is to intelligent Christian living, alert to the leading of the Holy Spirit in order that we might be useful to God in any way He directs our service to be directed. We must remember that we are soldiers in the Lord's army, His ambassadors, and it is to God to whom we have eventually to give an account of the use of our time here.

Our attitude towards the Lord's coming for his church should be, that it is today. As Pastors we have to prepare and deliver our messages as if each one given is our last. If the Lord does not come today, that is another day of grace, a day to praise and worship, not another day to waste.

This means that we must make each day count. We need to remember that the Lord Jesus Christ is coming and we need to apply ourselves to the study, application and teaching of God's Word. This is what Paul was passionately urging the Ephesians to have as their daily mental attitude. **Ephesians 5:14-21**.

In verse 12 we see that the care received from the Lord requires an agape love response from the Christian. Here you are giving your time, your energy and life for your fellow believer, that they might have what you have. The love of a Christian is seen best, when you could strangle another believer, but you just stop and think, "what can I do to get that person to know the Lord Jesus Christ a little better?" In this passage the Lord is saying, that He wants us to think about our brothers and sisters in Christ, the way that He has thought about us.

In verse 13, the Lord showed complete commitment to the Father's will. As a believer in the Lord Jesus Christ you have to commit yourself daily to serve Him. By this it means that you are committing yourself to serve the Lord Jesus Christ; to find His will for your life, not be seeking your own desires.

The Lord will not judge us on what we have done alone, but will judge us on how well we have done what He wanted us to do. Were we committed, were we faithful, were we motivated by love? We may feel we have a very insignificant role in the Lord's plan, but each of us is responsible to the Lord directly for what He wants us to do, not for what another has the tasking.

It is like the man who carried one of the tent pegs for the Tabernacle. He carried that peg for forty years. No one recognised the work that he was doing, but it was critical, as if the Tabernacle was not correctly pegged down it could collapse in high winds. It needed every peg to secure it, and the Lord recognized that person's work, as He will recognize ours, even if it is a "one peg role".

The Lord, through the Holy Spirit, has given a number of gifts to the church. **1 Corinthians 12:7, 11, 13, 27-31**. Some people think that the people "up front" in the church are going to be the ones most blessed in heaven. This is not necessarily so. The person who sweeps out the church may have a greater crown for their service than the minister, because he/she was more faithful to their tasking than the minister was to theirs. The minister was great but she/he only stretched them self to 60% of what they could have done, but the floor sweeper worked at 99% commitment. It is the heart of service, expressed in action that matters.

There are going to be people in heaven who have not led a soul to Christ, but they are going to be blessed above those who have led thousands. They were committed to serving the Lord any way they could. This means that in the job the Lord has given you to do, you should be the best you can be, working in the filling of the Holy Spirit.

"Greater love has no man than this that he laid down his life for his friends". This shows how great the love of God was when He died for us. This is not just theology; it is life. We are to take up our cross and follow Him. We cannot crucify ourselves, as it is one form of execution that you cannot do to yourself. Look to yourself as already crucified, already tied to the altar of service by the cords of love of the Lord for you.

It is of interest that the Greek word for life used in this verse is "psuche", which is normally translated soul.

You should desire nothing other than the glory of God. There are things in the world which mean something to us, but we should be dead to the temporary things of the world, and alive to Christ, and do what He wants us to do. Doctrine should always be personal; we should take everything in the Word personally and apply it passionately. He died for us while we were yet sinners. **Galatians 2:20, 6:14, 1 John 2:1-2**.

Romans 5:6-10. If He died for you while you were an unbeliever, and He did, what is He going to do for you as a believer?, surely He will only do much more?. What should there be affecting you in your life? Is there anything outside God's loving care for you? The Lord not only laid down His life for His friends, but he laid down His life for those who were not His friends. The definition of friendship is given by the Lord; He says, "You are my friends if you do what ever I command you". Having become His friends through salvation let us live as His friends, and that means showing the world we are His friends by following His life example!

He died for all, but tragically many unbelievers do not accept what has been done for them, and so they never make it their own. Tragically, many as Christians, who have accepted Him, do not follow things

through, and like Paul make Him Lord of their life. He wants us to not only accept Him as Lord and Saviour but to apply this fact to our daily lives. If you want the friendship of Christ, you have to come to grips with the Lordship of Christ.

The word for "friends" comes from the word "philos". We know about agape, it is a relaxed mental attitude caring love that seeks the best for the person loved. Phileo is the word that goes beyond agape love, it means loving, trusting, friendship. Agape is not emotional, and is not the highest form of love. Agape is a thinking loving concern, and it is commanded. You can go further than agape love, and get to the highest form of love, where you are committed to the person. Phileo is this higher form of love; it means family love.

Agape love is undergirding it, but the use of the word phileo, shows that you have real fellowship with the people. You can have agape love for people by caring, but you do not need to like them, but phileo falls in love with the people you care for, and that is the Lord's heart for the lost, and for the foolish sheep.

Agape love means you have to be concerned for them, and do the best for them. Phileo love means you like and love the one to whom agape love is directed. He is challenging us all to enter into this higher form of love, with Him and others in the family of God. It is a fellowship that is the result of Phileo, which is built first upon your fellowship towards His Word, that moves you to desire deeply to do His will. Sadly very few believers get to the stage where they can say that they know this love for the Lord in their life. This is the place of true fellowship. It is the joy that awaits the mature believer, and that should be all of us. Here is true relationship with the Lord, a relationship which is built on real passionate love for the Lord and for others.

Verse 15 shows that we are not in a master slave relationship, even though He is always going to be our Lord. You should always approach Him with reverence. He calls us friends, as we obey Him, we call Him Lord, we do not call Him our friend. He calls us "friend" if we obey Him in all things. The two perfect tenses in this verse remind us that He knows us fully and He calls us His own! We are secure in His love for us, and within His call on our lives.

There are very few people you can trust. There are very few friends that you can really trust. However every Christian growing in the love and knowledge of the Lord Jesus Christ has one person he/she can really trust; the Lord Himself. As you agape others, Jesus says, I will phileo you, and as you grow more like Him, you will experience that level of love towards Him and towards others who love Him also.

Most problems happen in churches because someone gets "Old Sin Nature" mad with someone and says something they should not say. As a result emotional rather than brain power takes over and this causes problems. The Lord tells us here the remedy for that sort of Old Sin Nature problem.

We are to think about our brothers and sisters as the Lord thinks of them. This is quite appropriate, because we are going to be with them in eternity, why not benefit them now, and assist them now, and so lay a good foundation for fellowship for-ever!

Verse 16. The Lord chose us. We did not choose Him. He knows more about us than we know about ourselves. The purpose of his choice is that we might bear spiritual fruit, and the fruit might remain forever. This is a sign of spiritual maturity – a focus upon eternal life and living and loving in the light of eternity.

In the ministry you will have many problems, but most can be solved by application of the Word in Agapao and Phileo love. You often will have people running around thinking that they have the fruit of the spirit, but they are sour, or rotten! Some believers will set your teeth on edge. Just recognize from this passage what is wrong – these people do not know Him and are not rightly related to the Word and the Spirit – help them!

Do not bring to the Lord anything that is inferior, and that means anything you have done in your own strength, rather than the Holy Spirit's strength, for what we do form our Old Sin Nature is inferior! Many people bring an offering of their time, but it is malformed by the unconfessed sins in their life.

The Lord says that if we do what He commands, then we will go on to maturity, and we will then produce good fruit. The people you meet will then be blessed because of you. In the Scriptures we are told we should have a sweet smelling savour about our lives which is absolutely as it should be. If you bring inappropriate fruit, the Lord will consider it to be "filthy rags" in his sight. **Isaiah 64:6**. You should always give of your best, and that is only possible when you operate in the power of the Holy Spirit.

The following passages from 1 John become very important in pastoral theology. **1 John 3:16-24, 4:7-12, 17-19**. "*Beloved let us love one another for love is of God*". These passages out of 1 John form a

commentary on John 15. If we do not love our sisters and brothers in the Lord, who we have seen, how can we say we love the Lord, who we have not seen?

You may need to quote this at church meetings when things are getting out of hand. As you are obedient to the Lord, you will be a friend to Him, and will be like Him in character. Fruit will form in your life and do so fully as the Holy Spirit takes charge. That is our purpose here, to be fruitful ambassadors for His glory.

APPLICATION

The standard for us is His behaviour. The idea is that they might know Him as you know Him. Jesus words express His objective for us, "that you might love one another as I have loved you".

You are to be as committed to His will, just as it reflects in His commitment to the Father's will. We are judged against the standard of Christ and not against any other servant of the Lord.

We are to look at the Lord crucified, and apply its significance to ourselves. We should model our attitude to the world on the attitude of Christ.

You need to live in the sphere of His Lordship, and that means daily doing what He commands with eyes fixed on Him, not eyes fixed on the "stuff" of this world.

God is not impressed by what we can do in our own strength, but he is glorified by what we do in the Holy Spirit's power.

DOCTRINES

CHRISTIAN LIFE - AMBASSADOR

1. An Ambassador does not appoint themselves, they are appointed by the nation represented, the king she/he represents, the person he/she represents. We are appointed by God. (**2 Corinthians 5:20**).
2. An Ambassador does not support themselves. We are sustained and protected by God (**Philippians 4:19**).
3. An Ambassador does not represent themselves. We represent God on earth. (**Matthew 28:19-20**).
4. An Ambassador does not belong to the nation to which she/he is sent. Positionally we are in heaven, experientially we are in the world. (**Philippians 3:20, John 15:19**).
5. All Ambassadors have instructions in written form. We have the Word of God. (**1 Thessalonians 4:1-2**).
6. An Ambassador representing their country does not treat any insult as personal. (**Matthew 5:11-12**).
7. When an Ambassador is recalled from a country it is tantamount to declaration of war. After the Rapture there will be massive warfare on earth. All Christians will be recalled at the Rapture. (**1 Thessalonians 4:13-17**).

CHRISTIAN LIFE: MATURITY

Categories of Believers

1. Standpoint of Spirituality:
 - a) Spiritual believer - the Holy Spirit controls the inside of the believer (**Romans 8:6b**).
 - b) Carnal believer - the sinful nature controls the inside of the believer (**Romans 8:6a**).
2. Standpoint of Growth:
 - a) Baby - one who has just received Christ as Saviour.
 - b) Adolescent - one who has learned some doctrine but is not yet in the application state.

c) Mature - one who knows and applies doctrine and spends a maximum amount of time in the filling of the Holy Spirit.

3. Relationship of Maturity and Spirituality:

a) Spirituality is an absolute. The Holy Spirit either controls or He does not. One cannot be a little bit carnal. If he is carnal he is NOT spiritual.

b) Maturity is speeded up by spirituality, but a baby believer can be either carnal or spiritual, and a mature believer can be carnal or spiritual.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: MATURITY - CROSS TO THE CROWN

Salvation is only the beginning of the plan for man. After salvation the believer's objective is to advance in stages of spiritual growth on the path from the Cross to the Crown.

At each stage the believer faces increasing intense tests that can only be passed by faith. Paul in **Romans 1:17** says believers progress from faith to faith. The five Hebrew words for faith illustrate the five stages of growth described in the New Testament.

1. The Babe - **1 Peter 2:2** - AMEN - the leaning faith of **Genesis 15:6**

All believers enter the family of God as infants when they exercise faith in the Lord Jesus Christ. After the tremendous stress of birth, of coming from darkness into the light the infant's impulse is to nurse.

The objective is nourishment but the baby also receives great comfort in feeding. God's objective for the spiritual infant is for growth, but He commences this with comfort. Not much is expected of a baby in his first few years, he cannot feed or change himself.

Spiritual infants are just as helpless and need a great deal of nurturing, encouragement and patient encouragement and patient instruction.

2. The Adolescent - **1 John 2:13-14** - BATACH - the wrestling faith of **Psalms 37:3**

The apostle John described the adolescent believer as young, strong and eager. This is the stage where people have grown to the point at which they understand some of the principles of truth and are beginning to apply them to their lives.

But like most adolescents, they have the growing pains of arrogance and rebellion against authority; they are sometimes too eager to act on their own, and this often gets them into trouble. They have knowledge which they mistake for wisdom, but they lack the experience. Their tendency is to want to apply the truth to other people's lives.

Adolescents may be troublesome, but at least they are not apathetic. They must be patiently trained and encouraged to channel their energies. No one makes it to maturity without passing through adolescence.

3. The Mature - **Hebrews 5:14, 6:1** - CHASAH - the confident faith that takes refuge in the Lord - **Psalms 57:1**

The mature believer is able to take meat, the advance doctrine of the Word. A believer who has arrived at spiritual maturity knows enough about the Bible to take responsibility for his own life. He knows how to apply the Word of God to himself so rather than airing all his problems he knows how to solve them.

He is not ready to take on every one else's problems but he can take control of his own life. He understands that God has a plan for his life and sets about fulfilling that plan. He gives himself to training and discipline, exercising himself and building spiritual muscle.

4. The Hero of Faith - **Isaiah 53:12, Hebrews 11** - YACHAL - the healing faith of **Job 13:15**

Heroes of faith are men and women who have gone beyond maturity and have learned to fight the good fight. They have advanced beyond simply taking responsibility for their own lives to becoming responsible for the lives of other people.

They are always willing to pick up fallen comrades, to treat their wounds, to encourage them and supply their needs. Heroes of the faith still make mistakes, they still fail but they always stand back up and go back into battle.

5. The Friend of God - **James 2:23-25** - QAWAH - the enduring faith of **Isaiah 40:31**

The highest of all possible achievements in life is to become a friend of God. Every believer has the potential and the assets necessary to reach this point, but very few Christians do. It takes persistency and tenacity. The only people who make it this far are those who absolutely refuse to quit.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: MATURITY - SIGNS OF MATURITY (ROMANS 15:1-15)

1. Helping others (v 1-3) The mature believer should bear the infirmities of the weak (v 1; cf. **Galatians 6:2**). Paul includes himself as a believer of mature strength.

a) A mature believer is characterised by:

- i) Knowing doctrine.
- ii) Knowing promises.
- iii) Spending a maximum amount of time by the filling of the Holy Spirit.

b) A weak or immature believer may be:

- i) A new believer.
- ii) An ignorant believer who does not know the Word.

c) A mature believer bears the infirmities of the weak believer by:

- i) Giving information about the Word (doctrine, promises, procedures). This may be in private conversation.
- ii) Giving advice based on the Word.
- iii) Exercising grace; listening to and helping others with problems.

d) The mature believer is not to "please himself" (v 1, 2):

- i) He is not to feed his ego or brag about helping others. It should never be done for self-glory or self-stimulation, but for God's glory.
- ii) Christ as the supreme example (v 3):

He did not please Himself; but as a man He received more pressure than we will ever have. The Old Testament says, "the reproaches of Israel ('them') that reproached the Father ('Thee') fell on the Son ('Me') on the cross." Paul quotes a Messianic Psalm (**Psalms 69:9**). Christ was under maximum pressure when He bore our sins on the cross.

2. Knowledge of the Word of God (v 4)

a) The Old Testament ("things written aforetime") was the only scripture existing at the time Romans was written. The canon is now completed.

b) the purpose of the Word:

- i) Learning - doctrine God wants us to know.
- ii) Patience - faith in the long distance race. Believing moment by moment.
- iii) Comfort - in trials and difficulties of life.
- iv) Hope - for the future. Believers know where they are going.

3. Attitudes (v 5-6)

Believers are to see others from the divine viewpoint and be "like-minded one toward another". Their one purpose in life, after salvation, is "with one mind and one mouth, glorify God" (v 6). This is only possible from the divine viewpoint.

- i) We are all saved by grace. Christ died for us when we were His enemies (**Romans 5:8**).
- ii) We all have the same spiritual privileges and responsibilities (except spiritual gifts).
- iii) Every believer has a sinful nature but have different ways of expressing it.
- iv) We all get spirituality the same way (filling of the Holy Spirit) and all grow the same way, by the Word.

v) God loves each believer with the same amount of love, whether we are in or out of temporal fellowship.

4. Fellowship as the basis of grace (v 7)

- a) Believers are to receive one another as Christ received them.
- b) He received them in GRACE to the glory of God.

5. Ability to distinguish between Israel and the Church (v 8-12)

- a) Christ was a minister under the Law (v 8).
 - i) He was born, ministered, died, arose and ascended under the dispensation of the Law.
 - ii) Therefore all He said (except Matthew 16 and John 14-17) amplified the Mosaic Law, confirmed the four unconditional covenants to Israel and the future of Israel with Him as their King. Some principles He gave are re-stated in the Epistles as the Christian way of life.
- b) Before the Law was given (v 9) the Abrahamic and Palestinian covenants promised blessing to the Jews, that the Gentiles may glorify God for His mercy.
- c) Paul quotes (**Psalm 18:49; Deuteronomy 32:43; Psalm 117; Isaiah 11:1-10**). (Jesus Christ as the root of David and Jesse, is to reign over the Gentiles too.)

6. Faith that appropriates (v 13)

- a) The God of hope is to fill the believer with joy and peace in the sphere of believing. Faith is the means.
- b) Faith appropriates salvation, restoration to fellowship, filling of the Holy Spirit, doctrine, promises.

7. Knowing the operation of grace (v 14, 15)

- a) A mature believer realises all he has is because of God's grace and he operates his life on the basis of grace.
- b) Grace is manifested in the believer in:
 - i) Salvation (**Ephesians 2:8, 9**)
 - ii) Prayer (**Hebrews 4:16**)
 - iii) Suffering (**2 Corinthians 12:9**)
 - iv) Releasing power (**2 Timothy 2:1**)
 - v) Growth and stability (**2 Peter 3:18**)
 - vi) Restoration and fellowship (**Hebrews 12:15; 1 John 1:9**)
 - vii) Producing works (**1 Corinthians 15:10; 2 Corinthians 6:1; 9:9**)
 - viii) Christian way of life (**2 Corinthians 1:12; Hebrews 12:28**).

HARMONY

RELATIONSHIP OF BELIEVERS TO EACH OTHER

This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you. Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you. These things I command you, that ye love one another.

146 G – RELATIONSHIP OF BELIEVERS TO THE WORLD - JOHN 15:18-25

John 15:18 If the world hate you, ye know that **it hated me** before it hated you. 19 If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. 20 Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. 21 But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they **know not** him that sent me. 22 If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloak for their sin. 23 He that hateth me hateth my Father also. 24 If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they **both seen and hated** both me and my Father. 25 But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled **that is written** in their law, They hated me without a cause.

KEY WORDS

World	Kosmos	World
Hate	Miseo	Love less [Present Active Indicative]
Know	Ginosko	Know [Present Active Indicative]
Hated	Miseo	Love less [Perfect Active Indicative]
Before	Proton	Before
Hated	-	Not in the original
Were	Eimi	Keep on being [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Love	Phileo	Love [Imperfect Active Indicative]
His own	Idios	Their own
Because	Hoti	Because
Are	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Have chosen	Eklegomai	Select [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Out of	Ek	Out of
Hateth	Miseo	Love less [Present Active Indicative]
Remember	Mnemeuo	Remember [Present Active Indicative]
Word	Logos	Word
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Servants	Doulos	Servant, Slave
Greater	Meizon	Greater
Lord	Kurios	Lord, Master
Have persecuted	Dioko	Persecute [Aorist Active Indicative]
Persecute	Dioko	Persecute [Future Active Indicative]
Kept	Tereo	Keep, Guard [Aorist Active Indicative]
Saying	Logos	Word
Keep	Tereo	Keep, Guard [Future Active Indicative]
Will do	Poieo	Do [Future Active Indicative]
Know	Eido	Perceive, Know [Perfect Active Indicative]
Sent	Pempo	Send [Aorist Active Participle]
Come	Erchomai	Come [Aorist Active Indicative]
Spoken	Laleo	Speak [Aorist Active Indicative]
Had	Echo	Have and hold [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Sin	Hamartia	Sin
Had	Echo	Have and hold [Present Active Indicative]
Cloak	Prophasis	Cloak, Outward showing
Hateth	Miseo	Love less [Present Active Participle]
Hateth	Miseo	Love less [Present Active Indicative]
Father	Pater	Father
Done	Poieo	Do [Aorist Active Indicative]
Works	Ergon	Work
None Other Man	Oudeis Allos	No one other
Did	Poieo	Do [Aorist Active Indicative]
Had not had	Echo	Have and hold [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Have seen	Horao	Discern clearly, See [Perfect Active Indicative]
Hated	Miseo	Love less [Perfect Active Indicative]
Both	Kai	Also
Cometh to pass	-	Not in the original

Word	Logos	Word
Might be fulfilled	Pleroo	To be fulfilled [Aorist Passive Subjunctive]
Written	Grapho	Write [Perfect Passive Participle]
Law	Nomos	Law
Hated	Miseo	Love less [Aorist Active Indicative]
Without a cause	Dorean	Without a cause, In vain

PERFECT TENSE VERBS

GRAPHO – WRITE, WRITTEN – Occurs 192 times in the New Testament with 96 times in the Perfect Tense so that, with the exception of Oida [to knows], Grapho is the most common verb appearing in the Perfect Tense in the New Testament. It appears in 11 individual books and is intimately involved with Bible prophecy. The frequency shows the utmost importance that God places on His unchangeable Word. We note that the Lord Jesus Christ directly quotes the Prophecies in over a third of occurrence of the Grapho Perfect Tense showing the unbreakable link between God and His Word. As prophecies comprise 27 of all verses in the Bible God expects to use them, those which have been perfectly fulfilled as encouragement and those yet to be fulfilled for our instruction and guidance especially as we see the opportunity for them all to be literally fulfilled.

HORAO – TO SEE – Occurs 115 times in the New Testament with 31 times in the Perfect Tense. It is one of 10 Greek verbs translated “to see” and with “Blepo” means to physically see. John the Apostle dominates the use of “Horao” with 25 of the occasions in his Gospel and Letters. Horao is wholly in the Active Voice and in the Indicative Mood in all but two cases.

MISEO – HATEFUL – Occurs 41 times in the New Testament with three times in the Perfect Tense In **John 15:18** and **John 15:24** there is seen to be a perpetual battle between believers and the world. In Revelation 18:2 it is in the Passive voice means “having been hated”. Mystery Babylon has become totally and permanently corrupt. It falls forever in the space of an hour. Revelation 18:9.

OIDA, EIDO – TO KNOW – Occurs 251 times in the Perfect Tense in the New Testament and is by far the largest with Grapho next at 96 occurrences. Because of the mixture of “knows” and “don’t knows” and different characters ranging from the Trinity, through the Disciples of Christ, Religious Leaders, and even to demons the review of this verb is given in each verse it occurs.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED AT THE FIRST COMING OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

ITEM	OLD TESTAMENT	DESCRIPTION	FULFILMENT
146G	Psalm 35:19	He was hated without a cause	John 15:25
	Psalm 69:4	He was hated without a cause	John 15:25

REFLECTION

Having seen the need for the believer to love as the Lord loved, we move to the other side of the equation, the world's hatred of the believer. The Lord is teaching something that we have stopped speaking of in the modern church, and its dangerous not to finish this chapter! The enemy's hatred of you, as a child of God, is consistently intense, and you need to be aware of the “Angelic Conflict” going on around you, or you will become a casualty. It is not without good biblical reason that you are told, Walk carefully, be Holy Spirit filled every moment, be prayerful every moment, and get your armour on! **Ephesians 5:14-21, 6:14-18.**

Verse 18. If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. 19. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. 20. Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. 21. But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me.

In verses 18 - 21 we notice the string of conditional clauses. There are lots of "ifs". The first one in verse 18 is a first class condition, which means, it's true.

The world will keep on hating you, present tense, it will be on-going. The permanent attitude of the satanic people around the spiritually growing believer is going to be hatred. This will remain a “fact of life” for all who love and serve the Lord in power, from those who have rejected the truth, hate it, and are strongly on the satanic team. What is the 'world' that the Lord is talking about? It is the satanic system in opposition to God.

Hate in this verse is initially present tense, to describe the on-going state of being hated, but then verse 19 ends with the perfect tense of hated, and this reminds us of the eternal results of such decisions by those who join the satanic side of history.

The mature believer preaches grace, and opposes legalism. They stand for the divine institutions, nationalism, marriage, the family, and free will, and so those who want people to die ignorant of God's policy will hate such a one, who starts to open people's eyes to the truth. We are seeing this increasingly in the Western World presently, with people speaking for anything biblical being attacked, silenced, or just ignored by media, but anyone teaching perversion, or any story that distracts; that will be the main news lead...

Remember that the common people gladly heard the Lord, **Mark 12:37**, but the power brokers hated the Lord, for He challenged their “world-power” systems. The hatred comes from those who have rejected the gospel and have committed themselves to the cosmos system of Satan. The Lord was hated by some and loved by some, and the determining factor was the individual's attitude to the Lord's message. Don't expect to be treated better than your Lord was!

In verse 19 we have a second class conditional clause in the Greek. This means, “if”, and it's not true. We do not belong to this world system of Satan, so its members will not like us, for those in it only like their own. We have been called “out” of the world system.

In verse 20 we are told to remember the Word of God! This verse is one you may have to cling to at times. As a mature believer you are part of the “great divide” between the saved and the lost. Baby believers can go anywhere and be happy, and that's why so many Christians don't understand these verses; they simply haven't grown up to a point where Satan's crowd feel threatened by them!

The good news is that the Lord is working, and the Holy Spirit is working, and those who love the Lord will love you, and you will be guarded by the Lord as you keep your eyes on Him, not the haters! The fellow believers are the ones you will be spending eternity with, so relax and enjoy the select company and rejoice in it! It is a matter of, “choose your company believer!” Decide who you will pay attention to, and who you will fellowship with, and relax with the hatred that comes from the other side.

In verse 21 the hatred you receive from Satan's crowd is hatred that is directed at the Lord, you just pick it up due to standing in His place here and now. Rejoice in this, in that you are thereby declared worthy to suffer for His name. **Acts 5:41**. Relax in the Holy Spirit's protection. You will not die one second before your time is up. They “do not know” (perfect tense) the Lord, and there are eternal results for them in that.

Verse 22. If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloak for their sin. 23. He that hateth me hateth my Father also. 24. If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father. 25. But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause.

These people are ignorant! Your life is convicting them as the Lord's life convicted those who saw him. They hate the feeling of conviction, and so they hate you, but they are without excuse, and that is the important thing. You have witnessed to the truth and that is your job before the Lord.

They stand condemned before the Lord, and when they face the Lord at the Great White Throne, they will have you there as one of their silent accusers. Justice will be done then. You may not see it in time, you may even die at the hands of these people as our Lord did, but in eternity, where it counts, they will be the ones who bow their heads. They will have no answer then, and with their master they will enter the Lake of Fire.

In **John 15:22-25** what is the sin that the Lord Jesus Christ is talking about here. Is it sin generally? Or is it a specific sin? It is a specific sin; it is the sin of rejecting Him. This is the sin of hating Him. If you do not recognise the Lord Jesus Christ, and you are ignoring His message, then you are hating Him, and hating the Father whose message He brought.

Do not think that you can say that you believe in God, but you do not accept the Lord Jesus Christ, for to reject the one the Father sent, is to reject the Father. By this He eliminates all Political, Rotary and Masonic type prayers offered in the name of the "God of all nations". It reminds us of James observation about the "faith of the demons", who believe God exists – for they know it is true – and they tremble! They do not worship truly however, and neither do all the fake deists! **James 2:19**.

The Lord says that because He has come He has ripped the cloak from the sin of rejection; it is exposed as the polite but fatal sin it is. He says, "face Me, face the Son. If you ignore Me you hate Me." **John 14:6**.

This sin finds further explanation in **John 16:8-11** - where it is called, "the sin of unbelief because they believe not Me". Unbelief is the evil that ends the unbeliever in the Lake of Fire with Satan and his demons forever. **Hebrews 3:12**. It is a fatal miss-calculation to ignore, be too busy for, or abuse the Lord. The Lord is convicting men of righteousness and the need for absolute righteousness.

The Holy Spirit convicts the unbeliever of the fact that their righteousness is as filthy rags in His sight. He says that the Holy Spirit will convict them as I have convicted them in person, that their righteousness is not good enough.

He also convicts them of the fact of judgement. The sin is one of rejection of the Lord Jesus Christ as Saviour and Lord. The only reason that a person ends up in the Lake of Fire is rejecting Christ as Saviour. - **Acts 4:12** - there is no other way to be saved.

What about those who have never heard of Christ? Here it could be stated that those who have not heard may still have that sin covered. If you do not know of Him what is your state? What about those who have never heard? If an unbeliever uses this argument against the Justice of God to you, you can take them to John 15 and say, "but you have heard, you have no cloak for your sin". Then you take them to John 3. Leave the issue of those who have not heard with Paul's words in **Acts 17:23-30**.

The theory of evolution makes science God. Listen to some scientists as they discuss the evolutionary process, and hear them personalize the process; hear them make evolution a force which creates things. The way you organise fossils for instance is based on your theory as is how they got there. That is where you move from the facts into faith, and this is where modern, so called "science", becomes religious to those who have rejected God.

Rationalism deifies the human mind and deifies natural processes and worships "mother nature". This is fine if the universe is no bigger than your mind. But I would argue that you have to be insane if you think that you can understand everything in your puny little mind.

For instance a human mind cannot think about a universe that goes on for ever, or infinity or eternity. Our present mind's structure cannot conceive of these concepts, for we are limited by space and time. Truly the Bible has said, "The fool has said in his heart that there is no God". **Psalms 14:1, 2:1ff**.

Rationalism is a late starter with human beings. The first way we learn and think is through faith. Faith begins with you as a baby. You accept things by faith as you are told by parents, which is the basis for all other forms of learning. People tend to initially work on faith, and then back it up with the other systems.

All people everywhere can go through the thinking process and come to the conclusion irrespective of where they are - that there is a Creator God. At certain times huge proportions of humanity will reject this however. Those who were against the truth, such as in the days of Noah, where 99.9% of people at that time, and they all thought he was wrong.

Most people believe that God exists, but do not want to do anything about it; Noah's neighbours were not atheists, they were theists, but felt that God didn't care about their immorality, nor did they want to do anything except enjoy their lives.

If the person anywhere on earth wants to know something about getting to know God, the Holy Spirit will lead believers to witness to them; God's holy character is at stake if the Holy Spirit does not move, and He always will.

We need to see the vastness of this question of the unsaved, which actually is not a problem, when we apply the doctrine of the Character of God and application of Bible history to the situation.

APPLICATION

Satan's policy is to obscure the Cross, and hinder anything that might lead the unbeliever to a saving knowledge of their Saviour.

When a believer grows in the grace and knowledge of the Lord and His policy, they become a real danger to the satanic plan, and will pick up satanic hatred from his team members in the vicinity.

Dumb or just baby believers are no threat at all, for they don't know enough to make God's policies clear to the unbeliever, but the mature believer does, and they can expect attack from the enemy!

What you will find is that your social life will become quite restricted once you move on to spiritual maturity.

You will find you are not welcome in certain circles at all, and you will not feel "right" in any place unless you are with other mature believers. So if you keep feeding on God's word don't expect to be the life and soul of the party!

The only party you will be at home with is the party where mature believers are celebrating the grace and love of their Saviour.

Our role is to stand against Satan's policy of cosmos thinking (worldliness), and when we do there will be a price to pay for some of us.

Are we ready? We will be if we are totally dependant on the Word and Holy Spirit. That is the only way to grow and the only way to win eternally!

DOCTRINES**ANGELS: SATANIC ATTACK ON BELIEVERS**

1. As believers we battle two enemies; the Old Sin Nature from within (Romans 7:18, 8:8, Galatians 5:16-19) and Satan without. (**John 8:44, 1 John 3:8**)
2. We must know what Satan is up to and learn his strategies so that we might be ready and alert. (**2 Corinthians 2:11**)
3. Satan's most potent attack is to install false pastor teachers within the church who teach just enough false doctrine to sidetrack foolish believers. (**2 Corinthians 11:13-15**)
4. Satan attacks believers' assurance of salvation.
5. He also accuses believers of sin both to God and to the believer in the form of guilt. (**Revelation 12:9-10**)
6. Satan wants us to trust our feelings; God wants us to trust His Word. (**Romans 8:1**)
7. Satan lures believers away from the Word (Genesis 3:4) whilst God wants believers stabilised upon His Word. (**Isaiah 26:3**)
8. Satan hinders believers from doing the geographical and operational will of God.
9. Satan will do all he can to hinder the believer's growth: (**2 Peter 5:18**)
 - a) by getting the believer's eyes off Christ and onto self, others or circumstances
 - b) by encouraging lust for material things over spiritual growth
 - c) by encouraging mental attitude sins.
10. Satan is the author of sin and the founder of fear. We are not called to fear but to faith. (**2 Timothy 1:7**)

ANGELS: SATAN'S STRATEGY AND TACTICS

1. Believers are warned against him and his tactics. **(Ephesians 4:27, 6:11-13, James 4:7, 1 Peter 5:8)**
2. We must be ready and alert. **(2 Corinthians 2:11)**
3. Satan is a deceiver and a counterfeiter. He uses deception - not obviously wrong or sinful - but very subtle changes to the truth **(Genesis 3:1)**. Remember, a counterfeit looks like the original.
4. Satan is described as an "angel of light" - often seeming attractive and "good". **(2 Corinthians 11:14)**
5. His tactics
 - a) Towards unbelievers.
 - i) to blind them regarding the gospel. **(2 Corinthians 4:3, 4, 2 Thessalonians 2:9, 10)**
 - b) Towards believers.
 - i) Satan seeks to hinder our growth and witness. **(1 Peter 5:8)**
 - ii) Satan will mislead into false doctrine and legalism. **(1 Timothy 5:14-15)**
 - iii) He persuades believers to ignore the will of God through disobedience **(Genesis 2:17, James 4:7-8)**
 - iv) Satan often attacks our assurance of salvation so that we doubt God.
 - v) Worry **(1 Peter 5, 7-9)**
 - vi) Fear of death. **(Hebrews 2:14-15)**
 - vii) He accuses believers of sin both to God and to the believer (using guilt). **(Revelation 12:9-10, Job 1:6-11)**
 - viii) He takes our focus off Christ by getting eyes on self **(1 Corinthians 1:10-11)**, on people **(1 Corinthians 1:12)**, on things **(Hebrews 13:5-6)**
 - ix) When we don't allow the Holy Spirit to control our lives, we open ourselves up to Satanic attack. **(1 Corinthians 7:5, 2 Corinthians 2:11, 1 Timothy 5:14-15)**
 - x) The Lord will allow Satan to attack a believer as discipline for unconfessed sin. **(1 Timothy 1:20 cf. 2 Corinthians 12:7)**
 - xi) Satan cannot indwell or possess a believer, only beguile them. **(Galatians 3:1)**
 - c) Towards the world in general.

The World - Satan tries to deceive the nations. **(Revelation 20:7-10)**

STRATEGY

Whilst God is trying to call out personnel for the angelic council Satan is trying to confuse and blind minds as to what God's plan is. He does this by deceit. He tries to keep the gospel from the unbeliever and to keep doctrine from the believer so that they will not grow.

His other strategy is to try and eliminate Israel by pogroms and anti-Semitism. It is said that Christ will gather the Jews not Zionism as is happening at the moment. If he could destroy all the Jews which he cannot he will destroy the Plan of God.

TACTICS

These are the techniques used by Satan to try and achieve his strategy. His main tactic is implied in John 8:44 where he is seen as the father of lies. There is no truth in Satan. He is a liar and has been from the beginning. The only truth is Christ the Word. Any one who deliberately distorts the truth is working for Satan. Rejection of Christianity is a rejection of the truth. By application all religions are therefore false.

Christians as a whole have failed to move out into all the areas of life and therefore have not claimed leadership in these areas and they have been forfeited to the unbeliever. Such areas as literature, history, philosophy, music, science, and the like.

The Christian should be a conqueror ideologically and not militarily. During this time Satan tries to cause conflicts such as creation versus evolution, relativism versus absolute values, internationalism versus nationalism. In the international area he causes war and strife.

Satan tries to confuse the believer. In **Romans 6:6-11** the Bible says that the sin nature shall not have dominion over you. We are told to resist the devil and he will flee from you. Sometimes when we resist it does not work because the temptation is from your sin nature. You need to apply relevant Scriptures to your situation.

Satan will try and mislead you in the area of divine guidance. Satan can set up situations that will lead you out of the geographical will of God which can even extend to martyrdom. You need to do things in the Lord's timing. Satan also perverts Scripture as seen in Luke 4:11 with the temptation of the Lord Jesus Christ where he misquotes **Psalms 91:10,11**

When people wrote the Scriptures they did not sit around with a blank mind. They used their minds and were led by the Holy Spirit as to what to write. When they had visions or dreams their minds were not turned off. When confronted by the Lord Jesus Christ Paul spoke to Him, He used his mentality.

In **2 Corinthians 11** ministers can act as messengers from Satan. Part of the Satanic attack is to get people to look inwardly rather than at their position at the right hand of the Father. With the case of suffering and sickness its source is sometimes difficult to determine as it can be the purpose of God or it can be an attack of Satan. This is hard to discern.

Often the more spectacular manifestations is the method used to distract one from more important things such as studying and applying the Word.

With regards to the Word we have the teaching of false doctrine such as saying that Christ did not actually die on the Cross, that He was not truly human nor divine.

In relation to the gospel we have the picture in the parable of the Sower and the Seed of the bird coming down and taking away the seed that is sown. In regard to worship he will mock God through senseless words. **Matthew 16** tells of Christ commanding Peter to get behind him as Peter is enthusiastic but has wrong concepts which Jesus saw as Satanic in origin as they did not conform to the Word of God. In Acts 5 Satan filled the heart of Ananias and Sapphira. He works in the children of disobedience.

Spiritism and Occultism is something that the Christian should not dabble in. In Deuteronomy 18:9 the Jews were told not to seek guidance from spiritism or occultism. The main attack on the church nowadays is not through cults but through spiritism and eastern religions and drugs. This is an attempt to break down the mentality of the soul. By these means you are opening the person up to demonic forces.

WORLDLINESS

1. Worldliness means to follow the beliefs and philosophy of man rather than that of God
2. Worldliness is the opposite to Godliness; it is thinking/doing in opposition to God's revealed word. **Titus 2:11-14.**
3. All people are faced with the constant choice of following God's way or the world's. **Romans 5:12, 3:19, 1 Corinthians 1:21, Ephesians 2:12, James 1:27, 2 Peter 1:4, 2:20.**
4. Satan is the "prince of this world", and has power to deceive those who are negative to God's plans. **John 12:31, 14:30, 16:11, 1 Corinthians 4:4, 1 Peter 5:8,9.**
5. We must not love the world, **1 John 2:15-17.**
6. We must hate all the world stands for, in thought and in deed. **1 Corinthians 5:9-13, 11:30-32, Galatians 6:14, James 1:27, James 4:4, 2 Peter 1:3,4, 1 Corinthians 3:18, 19.**
7. We must not return to our old behaviour patterns, **Ephesians 2:1-7.**
8. This evil world system and the prince of this world will be condemned. **Matthew 18:7, John 12:31, 16:11, 1 Corinthians 6:2, 2 Peter 3:7, 2 Peter 2:1ff.**

CHRISTIAN LIFE: EVANGELISM

1. All believers are ambassadors for Christ, and are obliged to give the give the gospel to unbelievers. (**Acts 1:8, 2 Timothy 4:5**).
2. Two forms of witnessing - with the lips (**2 Corinthians 5:18-21**) and by the life (**2 Corinthians 3:3**)
3. The gospel is "good news".
4. Sin is not an issue. Jesus died for all sin on the cross. The penalty has been paid. The issue now is "Do you trust that Jesus Christ has died for your sins, and was raised from the dead to give life to all who believe on Him?" People choose to either rely upon Jesus Christ, or upon their own good works, to be saved. (**Romans 8:1, 9-30-33**)
5. What about the heathen who haven't heard?
 - a) God is totally fair, and everyone has the chance to be saved
 - b) Unlimited Atonement (**Colossians 2:14, 15**)
 - c) God's will - none should perish (**2 Peter 3:9**)
 - d) Man's negative will - God consciousness - Gospel hearing.
6. Witnessing is impossible except through the power of the Holy Spirit. (**John 16:8-13**) The Holy Spirit convicts of
 - a) Sin because of unbelief.
 - b) Righteousness.
 - c) Judgement because of Satan being judged (**Matthew 25:41**)
7. The natural man needs the Holy Spirit to understand the gospel (**1 Corinthians 2:14**)
8. The Bible is the weapon of witnessing. (**1 Corinthians 15:3, 4**)
9. Biblical Pattern of Witnessing. (**1 Thessalonians 2:1-12**)
 - a) Effective contact (v.1)
 - b) The gospel must be given even under opposition. (v.2)
 - c) The gospel must never be compromised or watered down - (v.3)
 - d) The believer in whom the gospel is deposited is tested by God and should not be for the praise of man. (v.4)
 - e) Flattery should never be part of the gospel. (v.5-6)
 - f) Whilst the gospel should not be given to get praise from men it should be given in love without cost (v9)
 - g) The gospel must be followed up (v 10) with discipleship and teaching (v11) so that the new believer can become spiritually self reliant. (v.10-12)
10. Your obligation to witness (**Romans 1:14-16**): you are a debtor (v14), you are ready (v15), you are not ashamed (v16)
11. Win souls, not arguments. Stay on the gospel, don't get side-tracked.
12. We are fishers of men **Matthew 4:19**
 - a) Fishermen need to be equipped to fish. You need to be walking in the Spirit and you need to know the gospel.
 - b) Fishermen go to where the fish are. You must be in contact with unbelievers so that you can witness to them.
 - c) Fishermen are patient. Allow for the conviction and preparation of the Holy Spirit in the life of the unbeliever.
 - d) Fishermen know what bait to use for different fish. You have to be flexible and know how to approach different personalities.
 - e) Fishermen concentrate on fish and not the fishpond. Our primary concern is saving people - the evil in the world will continue to exist.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: EVANGELISM – FISHERS OF MEN

We are fishers of men **Matthew 4:19**

1. A fisherman needs to be prepared and equipped to do the task. You need to be walking in the Spirit and you need to know the gospel. We need to be prepared in knowledge and power. Quite often you need to be trained.
2. The fishermen go to where the fish are. As a believer you must be in contact with unbelievers so that you can individually target them. This is why monasticism is wrong.
3. Fishermen are patient. They wait. They know the fish are there but they wait until the right time to cast the bait. You do not waste your bait but walk under the guidance of the Holy Spirit so that when you recognise that someone is under the conviction of the Holy Spirit you can fish successfully. You work with unbelievers and look for an opportunity provided by the Holy Spirit to give the gospel.

You do not give them the gospel when they are five kilometres away. Ignorant Christians are blurting out the gospel to unbelievers who have not been prepared and consequently are disturbing the fish. They are not sensitive; they are not waiting seeing what the Spirit is doing. In Acts the people who were being added to the church were those who were being saved by the work of the Holy Spirit.

4. Fishermen know what bait to use and the different approaches to catch all sorts of fish. You do not have the same bait for all fish. Paul for instance gave a different message in Athens compared to what he gave in Philippi. This is the danger of having just one tract in your pocket as it constrains you in your approach. You have to be flexible and know where the people are so that it will be meaningful to them and meet them where they are. Paul in **Acts 16** is talking to philosophers so he comes in at a different level than in other cases.

5. Fishermen concentrate on fish and not the fishpond. You are to fish for fish and not try and clean the fishpond. We should be concerned with the souls of men and not cleaning up the environment. **1 Peter 1:17, Ephesians 5:16, Colossians 4:5, 1 Corinthians 9:22**

CHRISTIAN LIFE: EVANGELISM - NEW TESTAMENT PATTERN

1. The pastor of the local church must practice a Bible saturated, spirit controlled life. By his systematic teaching of the Word he must encourage people to apply it in their life. The vessels that the Lord uses must be clean.
2. You must have a co-ordinated prayer life in the Church. This consists of the mid week prayer meeting and organising your prayer warriors. You need specific weekly prayer sheets.
3. You need to have weekly meetings with your deacons and elders to plan strategies for the church. You need to have that for a prayer plan for the week. It is good to have this on Sunday morning over breakfast so that the prayer points can be noted down and duplicated by the pastor for the morning service.

This gives current material. You plan your visitations, your speakers and how it can be co-ordinated in with the overall preaching plan. There also needs to be a home fellowship strategy and a strategy for the Bible class and Sunday School.

4. In the preaching everything must tie into the evangelistic, witness function of the church. He must emphasise that they are ambassadors and evangelists.
5. The minister encourages the people to find the fish. Every week they should be reminded of their work in this area.
6. Every believer should have his own list of people who he is praying constantly for. He should have a list of ten unbelievers and as one is converted a new name should be emplaced on the list.
7. The church contacts should be followed up as part of the strategy. This is the importance of a Sunday School. The Sunday School should be well known in the area. The unbelieving parents who send their

children to Sunday School should be followed up by the minister to show friendliness towards them. You may be their only Christian contact.

8. There needs to be a church service follow up. Every visitor should be made to feel welcome but not embarrassed. Never ask a visitor to stand up. After the service have a coffee time and a special room set aside for visitors. It is an advantage to have a service which finishes a bit earlier. The minister follows up the visitors and lets an elder go on the door.

9. Organise visitation and be visible with walking through districts and greeting those you meet. This is far better than driving and parking. The morning should be in the study. Have a meal at home to have time with your wife or family, after lunch visitation. With walking you get exercise and are away from the phone.

Plan to visit three or four locations only. Drive to a central location and walk. If you are seen on the street people get to know. You have raised the profile of the church. You are swimming in the sea with the fish. Sit down with street kids, help an old lady. The church needs to draw on the local area. You need to be decently dressed but not suit and tie.

HARMONY

RELATIONSHIP OF BELIEVERS TO THE WORLD

If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me.

If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloak for their sin. He that hateth me hateth my Father also. If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father. But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause.

146 H – PROMISE OF THE HOLY SPIRIT - JOHN 15:24-16:15

John 15:26 But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me: 27 And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning. John 16:1 These things **have I spoken unto you**, that ye should not be offended. 2 They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service. 3 And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me. 4 But these things **have I told you**, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you. 5 But now I go my way to him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou? 6 But because **I have said** these things unto you, sorrow **hath filled** your heart. 7 Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. 8 And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment: 9 Of sin, because they believe not on me; 10 Of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more; 11 Of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged. 12 I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. 13 Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come. 14 He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you. 15 All things that the Father hath are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

KEY WORDS

Comforter	Parakletos	Comforter
Come	Erchomai	Come [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Will send	Pempo	Send [Future Active Indicative]
From	Para	Vicinity
Father	Pater	Father
Spirit	Pneuma	Spirit
Truth	Aletheia	Truth
Proceedeth	Ekporeuomai	Come from [Present Middle Indicative]
Testify	Martureo	Testify, Witness to [Future Active Indicative]
Shall bear witness	Martureo	Testify, Witness to [Present Active Indicative]
Have been	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Beginning	Arche	Beginning
Things	Tauta	Things
Spoken	Laleo	Speak [Perfect Active Indicative]
Should not be	Me	No, Not
Offended	Skandalizo	Offended, Scandalized [Aorist Passive Subjunctive]
Put you	Poieo	Do [Future Active Indicative]
Out of the synagogues	Aposunagogos	Out of the synagogue
Time	Hora	Time, Hour
Cometh	Erchomai	Come [Present Middle Indicative]
Killeth	Apokteino	To put to death, Kill [Aorist Active Participle]
Think	Dokeo	Think [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Doeth	Prosphero	Do, Tender to God [Present Active Infinitive]
God	Theos	God
Service	Latreia	Worship, Service
Will they do	Poieo	Do [Future Active Indicative]
Known	Ginosko	Know [Aorist Active Indicative]
Have told	Laleo	Speak, Tell [Perfect Active Indicative]
Come	Erchomai	Come [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Remember	Mnemeuo	Remember [Present Active Subjunctive]
Told	Epo	Tell, Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Said	Epo	Tell, Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Beginning	Arche	Beginning
Was	Emen	Was
Go my way	Hupago	Go [Present Active Indicative]

Sent	Pempo	Send [Aorist Active Participle]
Asketh	Erotao	Ask [Present Active Indicative]
Goest	Hupago	Go [Present Active Indicative]
Said	Laleo	Say [Perfect Active Indicative]
Sorrow	Lupe	Sorrow, Sadness
Filled	Pleroo	Fill [Perfect Active Indicative]
Heart	Kardia	Heart
Tell	Lego	Say, Tell [Present Active Indicative]
Truth	Aletheia	Truth
Expedient	Sumphero	Be better for [Present Active Indicative]
Go	Aperchomai	Go away [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Go	Aperchomai	Go away [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Come	Erchomai	Come [Future Middle Indicative]
Depart	Poreuomai	Depart [Aorist Passive Subjunctive]
Send	Pempo	Send [Future Active Indicative]
Come	Erchomai	Come [Aorist Active Participle]
Reprove	Elegcho	Reprove, Admonish [Future Active Indicative]
World	Kosmos	World
Sin	Hamartia	Sin
Righteousness	Dikaiousune	Righteousness
Judgment	Krisis	Judgment, Condemnation
Believe	Pisteuo	Believe [Present Active Indicative]
Go	Hupago	Go [Present Active Indicative]
See	Theoreo	See [Present Active Indicative]
Prince	Arkon	Elder, Prince, Ruler
Judged	Krino	Judge [Perfect Passive Indicative]
Have	Echo	Have and hold [Present Active Indicative]
Many Things	Polus	Many [things]
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Infinitive]
Bear	Bastazo	Bear, Receive [Present Active Infinitive]
Spirit	Pneuma	Spirit
Come	Erchomai	Come [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Will guide	Hodegeo	Show the way, Guide [Future Active Indicative]
Speak	Laleo	Speak [Future Active Indicative]
Hear	Akouo	Hear [Future Active Indicative]
Speak	Laleo	Speak [Future Active Indicative]
Shew	Anaggello	Announce, Show, Declare [Future Active Indicative]
Things to come	Erchomai	Come [Present Middle Participle]
Glorify	Doxazo	Glorify [Future Active Indicative]
Receive	Lambano	Receive [Future Middle Indicative]
Shew	Anaggello	Announce, Show, Declare [Future Active Indicative]
Hath	Echo	Have and hold [Present Active Indicative]
Said	Epo	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Shall take	Lambano	Take [Present Active Indicative]
Shew	Anaggello	Announce, Show, Declare [Future Active Indicative]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS

LALEO – TO SPEAK - Occurs 298 times in the New Testament with 14 appearances in the Perfect Tense, In John 6:63 Jesus says that the words He “speaks” are spirit and are life. Jesus said that the Jews seek to kill Him, a Man who had “told” them, the truth from God John 8:40. However in John 9:29 the Jews say that they know that God “spoke” to Moses but do not know about Jesus. Addressing the disciples at the Last Supper in John 15:3 Jesus tells them that they are all clean because of the words He had “spoken” to them already while in John 15:11 that the words “spoken” to them was so that their joy might be full and peace rule their hearts. John 16:33.

In **John 16:1** the words “spoken” were so they should not stumble, in **John 16:4** when the time comes they may remember them but noted that because He had told them of His departure at this stage they were sorrowful. **John 16:6**. In John 16:25 Jesus said that He had been speaking in parables but would now “speak” plainly, and in John 18:20, that He had always “spoken” openly in the synagogues when asked about His doctrines by the High Priest.

PLEROO – FILLED, FULFILLED, COMPLETE – Occurs 95 times in the New Testament with 18 times in the Perfect Tense in ten books. With John the Baptist in prison, Jesus, in Mark 1:15, tells His listeners that the time is fulfilled and the kingdom of God is at hand. He reinforces this in Luke 4:21 where, after reading a short passage of Isaiah. He said, “Today this Scripture is fulfilled in your hearing”. However in John 7:8 with the Feast of Tabernacles was at hand but Jesus was not going up with the disciples because His time had not yet fully come. In **John 16:6**, at the Last Supper, Jesus said that the new that He was going away had **filled** their hearts with sorrow and later in John 16:24 invites His disciples to ask in His name so that their joy might be full. In John 17:13 Jesus addressing His Father saying that these things I speak in the world that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED AT THE FIRST COMING OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

ITEM	OLD TESTAMENT	DESCRIPTION	FULFILMENT
146H	Proverbs 1:23	He will send the Spirit of God	John 16:7
	Isaiah 44:3	He will send the Spirit of God	John 16:7-13

REFLECTION

Verse 26. But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me: 27. And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning. 16:1. These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended.

In these verses the Lord refers to witnessing after he has referred to His role. “I am the witness of God”, says the Lord, “because I am the real revelation of God, but you disciples are my witnesses. You are not going to witness alone, because I am going to give you the Holy Spirit to empower you.” Before the Cross the Lord was alerting the disciples to the future provision and role of the Holy Spirit, who from Pentecost will permanently indwell them, rather than just “come upon them” as occurs at this point.

It is clear therefore that the Lord Jesus Christ is confident of the success of the Cross. We are therefore to be confident also, and for all our life, but especially for witnessing activity, under the control and filling of the Holy Spirit, who is the key witness on the earth today.

At all stages of Christian growth we can be witnesses. As a young Christian you may be seen to have changed a lot because of conversion. This gives you a good chance to witness as to how the change has been effected. Later as you mature you become more sensitive to what is happening in the lives of other people, and Holy Spirit led, you can zero in on those who are clearly under conviction. The Bible is the owner’s manual for every woman and every man. The Spirit works on, in, and through the Word. Show them that He is the answer through the Word; open it and share it with all.

You are to be “fishers of men”. **Matthew 4:19**. You keep on doing your job as a witness, as you increase in the knowledge of the Lord. Like the fisherman, they must have the desire to fish, the right bait, and be where the fish are. Fishermen look for the signs of the fish. The fisherman goes to the place where the fish is. You do not fish for trout with a shark hook, nor look for trout in the surf, but you do find sharks in the surf line.

In **John 16:1**, Jesus reminds them that he has taught them all they will need to survive the days to come. That everything he has spoken, is what he knows they will need, that's why he has told them. We, like the disciples, forget this at our peril, as we need Him and His Word every hour we live on this temporary planet!

Doctrine applied to our lives, is our protection against making fools of ourselves. The word for offended here, is the Greek word, 'skandalizo'. It means to be offended, embarrassed, overwhelmed, so that you fall apart. Doctrine applied stops this emotional reaction to traumatic events. The disciples will still fall apart and, like them, we often do also, but neither they nor we need to! If we know and apply the Lord's words we are kept safe and our minds and emotions will be stabilized in the Word of Truth. **2 Timothy 1:7**.

Foolish believers 'fall from grace' into legalism, and many more fall from fellowship through mental attitude sins of lusts and fears, and so lose the fruit of the spirit, moving from kindness, calm and love, into despair, doubt and despondency. With the Lord's words to guide us we do not need to fall anywhere! Let us draw closer and closer to Him, and His Word.

JOHN CHAPTER 16

2. They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service. 3. And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me. 4. But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you. 5. But now I go my way to him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou? 6. But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart.

In **Romans 1:14–16** when Paul thought about the giving of the gospel, he thought about three things; firstly, he was ready, he knew the facts to be given, secondly he was not ashamed of the gospel message, and thirdly he felt a sense of obligation to unbelievers, he believed he "owed" them the gospel message. This is our challenge, to be like this in our mental attitude.

Verse 2 shows that the more the believer grows, the more the implacable hatred of the devil's world for the believer will be. The context of this verse is the local village Jewish synagogue, and it happened to the early believers in Judaism, but it will also happen to us today, and in the future, as religious unbelievers in the organised churches express their hatred of the Bible believing Christians, who keep "harping on about the Bible"....

Note the two phases of opposition; Phase 1 - they will cast us out of the assemblies, and then, Phase 2 - they will actively pursue us, even to killing us. Saul of Tarsus went all the way in this area before he was saved, and so will many a liberal minister, who hates the people he/she labels as, 'fundamentalists'.

Verse 3 indicates that these haters of the "Word of Truth", and the "people of the Book" are spiritually ignorant or confused people, who end up following the 'doctrines of demons', **1 Timothy 4 : 1**, by default, for they have rejected the real truth, as to them it is, 'too extreme'. They talk, like the hypocrites of Matthew 7, of their relationship with the Lord, but their words and deeds show that they have never known the Father or the Son at all, as their lives do not resemble the Lord. See **Matthew 7:15 – 23**, **Galatians 5:22**, and then **Matthew 10:16 - 18**.

Up until this time the disciples could come to the Lord in person and speak with him, but within six hours he will be separated from them, and they will have to get used to a different way of communication with him. They will have to claim spiritual resources, the Word, and Prayer if they wish to speak with Him. This is where we are today; our reality is a spiritual one. Jesus is warning the disciples that this is just about to happen.

Our subject here is still evangelism and it's consequences for the evangelist. It is quite common that the evangelist will be subject to persecution. When people are awakened by the gospel do not expect them to wake up in a good mood. What the Lord is talking about, and John is recording in this chapter is persecution will come mainly from religious but unsaved people. This is the satanic opposition to the gospel. What can you expect if you give the gospel in power and with enthusiasm? As Christians we have to be as mild as doves but as wise as owls, and as careful as serpents. We must be quick at spotting danger and seeing opportunities: we must then be quick to apply doctrine, so that we know when to stand and speak, as a Steven, or when to leave the city by night, as Peter or Paul.

The Lord did not trust himself to man because He knew what was in the heart of man. People get conned by the, "I'm OK you're OK" type of religious philosophy, but when you stand on Biblical truths you will come up against hate filled opposition. These are religious people who think that they have a relationship with God but, 'know not the Father or Me', says the Lord. These people will hate you for you are in effect calling them liars and fraudsters; you are telling the truth, but don't expect them to like you for it. Believers are often baffled at the hatred of the religious unbeliever towards them, but it is quite natural!

In **Jude 3** we are reminded that we stand upon and have, 'the faith that was once and for all delivered to the apostles'. There are many who have gone very wildly away from this, and yet still think they are genuine, but they are in total deception.

Those people will kill you and think that they are doing the will of God, for they see you as an extremist, who will 'turn people off from the message of the love of God'. They are "wishy washy" in their liberalism, but red hot in their hatred of a Bible Believing Believer!

Jesus is only a few hours from the cross. He is entering the garden of Gethsemane, and will be under arrest within two hours. The Lord says that He has left this message until now, as soon He is not going to be with them.

After His death the Lord will be with them occasionally in His resurrection body. They, like us now, have to depend on the Written Word of the Lord, and not his physical presence. It is wonderful to walk with Him in the Word, even when He is not physically with you, and that is our call, to the walk of faith, where the Holy Spirit makes the Lord's presence real to us. They are going to be walking with Him, but as an internal communication in prayer, rather than an external presence. They are going to have to learn to deal with crises without the Lord being with them physically, but rather to depend on the Holy Spirit.

Growth really starts only when crises come along to our life, and we grow in strength as we apply the Word into the crises. At that point, if a problem comes along, you do not say, "Why me?", but, "Lord I have a problem and am looking forward to seeing how You will show me things through it".

The great Bible Teacher W G Scroggie was thrown out of a couple of churches because he did not preach what they wanted. He had a family to keep, but no job for two years, and he trusted the Lord through the time, and the Lord brought him through, and in that time he wrote the material that has blessed so many ever since ("Guide to the Gospels", and "The Unfolding Drama of Redemption"). This is where we find ourselves at times, and like the saints of old we are called to apply faith. We claim the Word in the hard things that happen. **Romans 8:26-39.**

Verses 5 and 6 shows how sensitive the Lord was to the disciples. Their mouths have dropped, they look miserable, they are feeling depressed. He asks them why no one has asked him where He is going. The Lord is challenging these people, as he often challenges us through situations we face. So often we hear something from God's Word, which hits you between the eyes and you get depressed. Rather than facing the reality of the Scriptures you want to run from the hard truth. When this happens take it and ask the question that is on your mind. Be honest with your God.

David was called a friend of God because he was honest with the Lord. If you look at David's Psalms he often appears cheeky, but he was honest and poured out his heart before the Lord. We need to keep on asking for guidance through His Word. When you say, "Why me", you have got your eyes off the Lord and on to your problems. As an alternative you need to learn to say, "Show me why is this happening Lord, and I am looking forward to Your solution for your glory."

Christ says that He is going, "hupago", which means to go and catch a bus. He is talking about the Cross, but He uses very 'normal' language to describe His death. He is going to die and leave the earth by way of the horror of the Cross, but He is talking as if it is just a normal thing to do, and quite a relaxing journey.

He talks about it in absolute confidence; there is no panic. He has absolute knowledge of what is going to happen. He has a calm resolution and it is in these times that we see just how great the Lord Jesus Christ is. Here we see the challenge of applying God's Word. Every moment you do not you are wasting. He is going to the Cross but He is in control. He is still in control of all things, and you can relax in your life in His care.

Verse 7. Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. 8. And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment: 9. Of sin, because they believe not on me; 10. Of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more; 11 Of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged.

The Lord's departure is going to win a battle and allow a new arrival, as the Spirit is going to come in power on the Christians. He is going to indwell believers permanently for the first time in history. Jesus said to them, 'He is with you, and will be in you'. This is the difference between the believer before the Cross, and after Pentecost. Before the Cross the Holy Spirit came upon believers at times, and then left. He was there to help them at times, with them for a tasking. After Pentecost the Holy Spirit is permanently "in" the believer for empower them for every task!

This was something that David and all the prophets longed for. This is something that we do not understand or use as much as we should. This is an area where the Christian often does not get to grips with the Lord in prayer over the Word. Bible study should be fellowship, sitting at the table with God.

"It is expedient that I go away". Here we have a different word, which means that I am returning to a place where I have been before, so the Lord is very confident about the success of His mission. The Lord knows where He has been, and where He is going, and what is about to unfold. He is in total control.

'But if I go', and we have a third word for "go" here, "poreuomai", which is the word for go on a journey. It means to set a course and to have a goal and travel some distance. What is the Lord's goal, it is to deal with sin, defeat death, and then return to announce that fact. He is going to the Cross, he is going to go into hell, announce the victory, and then return to the earth in resurrection body, and finally about 40 days later depart and return to heaven.

He is looking at His purpose, which is to deal with sin, defeat Satan, and defeat death itself. The cross is going to be the place of victory not defeat. The Cross will allow the Holy Spirit to come, to enable the believer to deal with sin in the power He will provide through His victory, and for the unbeliever to be convicted of the need for a Saviour.

Verses 8-11 is a key passage in evangelism, as it is only in this relationship with the Holy Spirit, that you will be successful in your ministry. This shows how people are challenged by the Holy Spirit, and what the exact challenge is.

Here it shows that Satan's destiny is sure, and he is a defeated foe now, and that is another reason he hates us, because we have more power than he has against us, due to the indwelling Holy Spirit. **1 John 4:4**. The author of sin is going to the lake of fire. Sin has been dealt with on the Cross, and the Holy Spirit has been sent to convict the unbeliever of sin, righteousness, and judgement and to face Christ the one who has beaten sin.

MINISTRY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT TO THE UNBELIEVER

(a) **RESTRAINING (2 Thessalonians 2:7)**. If unbelievers were unrestrained in the Church Age the one world system which Satan is trying to establish would come. After the rapture of the Church it will come.

(b) **CONVICTING (John 16:7-11)** (i) Sin - the barrier which remains in unbelief. (ii) Righteousness - God is totally righteous, man is only relatively righteous and needs God's righteousness for salvation. (iii) Judgement - Satan and all unbelievers are judged.

(c) **REGENERATION (John 3:5)** Man without the spirit cannot understand spiritual things. The Gospel is spiritual, the Holy Spirit makes the gospel a reality to the unbeliever when one believes and is "born again" or regenerated. (**1 Corinthians 2:14**)

The unbeliever is convicted and exposed to the light. Unbelievers do not want to face the reality of death and judgement of sin. They will hide from it with loud music, partying, being a workaholic, alcohol. There are many ways of avoiding conviction regarding sin, righteousness and judgement. You will not find people walking around looking at their sin, and need for a Saviour, unless the Holy Spirit has been working on them. If you are going to give the answer to that person's needs, it has to be to those who are asking the questions.

The Spirit convicts of these three things only. "Sin" is in the singular, which means that the old sin nature is the thing that the Holy Spirit convicts them of, that they are by nature sinners, and not their individual personal sins. The unforgivable sin is only one thing = unbelief, and that is the reason that people will be in the lake of fire forever, because they rejected God's solution to the sole and fatal spiritual problem that each man and woman has. "*How shall we escape if we neglect so great a salvation?*" **Hebrews 2:1-3**.

He is also convicting of righteousness, because the Lord is going to the Father, and they will see Him no more. While the Lord was present on the earth He was a living physical rebuke to man as He showed in His person the absolute righteousness of God in man. When they saw Him they saw that they fell short of His standard. Many of the Christians who say that they would have liked to have been with the Lord when He was on earth, would not in fact have been pleased, because He would have rebuked them. Their state of unrighteousness and sinfulness would have been put into very strong focus.

Unrighteousness is a bigger concept than sin, as it incorporates the concept of those things that we do not do as well as we ought to do. It is everything that falls short of the glory of God. It is important that people see that God has a Holy Standard, and that we all fall short of the Holy Standard.

All our righteousness are as filthy rags in His sight. If you are going to be an intelligent evangelist you need to have this concept clear, and feel your own sinfulness and unworthiness before you preach the “good news”. If we are not clear about our own unrighteousness we will tend to be critical of others – rather than seeing that we are all needing grace, mercy and love.

The third area of conviction is that of judgement, as the prince of this world is judged. You are either on one side or the other, you are either with the Lord, or the prince of this world. There is no middle ground. The unbeliever shares the judgement of Satan, for they share Satan's arrogant refusal to take God's Word and Christ's work seriously, and so they stand before God and share that judgement. Satan looks good but is evil and will be exposed fully at the Great White Throne and so will all who follow his arrogance.

People are in hell because they have rejected the Christ – they think He is not for them, or that they are good enough, they don't need Him.... He is however the only way to the Father – there is no other way but by Him and His work on the Cross. If you reject Christ, you are going to be judged by Christ. In the stakes of righteousness we all fall short. There is no hope for you if you walk away from Him, and you share judgement, just as the author of sin does.

Satan will be judged, and all who reject Christ will be judged with him. Many unbelievers think they will sneak in the back door while St Peter is asleep at the front door of heaven.... This is dangerous nonsense, and show the arrogance of those who ignore the cost of the Cross and insult the Lord's blood shed for them. There are many people who have a cartoon caricature of God as an old man with a long white beard who will let you into heaven because He is so good and weak that He wont judge you too badly, and He will love your company, and He is able to be fooled. These are dangerous lies and fatal for people eternally.

Here the Lord Jesus Christ says very clearly, that if you believe that nonsense, that you will not be accepted, which puts you in a very dangerous position. You will be judged. You will stand before God as you rejected what God did on the Cross. Bible teachers have generally not pictured the sheer horror of the Cross as they ought to have, and so few really know what God did for us there. They picture the Cross as something not too bad. Unbelievers must see just how far God went to win salvation for them.

If they see the full horror of the Cross, and the full horror of their unrighteousness, they will realise the absolute certainty of their doom. As the writer of the Hebrews said, "How shall we escape if we neglect so great salvation?" People think they can escape because they do not have a high enough view of the Cross, and a low enough view of their sin. In our teaching, preaching and witnessing we should use this passage of Scripture to help with the conviction of the unbeliever. The Holy Spirit uses the Word!

Satan - the usurping prince of this present world is judged. The sentence has already been pronounced on Satan and just awaits execution. We should be living like the winners the Lord has made us in relationship with Him. 1 John 4:4! Sentence on the enemy has been delayed for a while, but it is sure. The final judgement of Satan is given in Revelation 20-22.

The joy in the life of the mature believer is because of the resurrection of Christ, and what that means for our own resurrection. A cross reference to this is **Romans 6:4-6**. You should not be a slave to sin any longer you should be a slave to righteousness in Christ, walking daily in the filling of the Holy Spirit, and so bearing the “fruit of the Spirit”.

In **John 15:27 - 16:11**. He says that we will be His witnesses. The gospel (good news of the defeat of sin and death) of Christ is hated by Satan's people. Mankind in general, including backsliden Christians, hate the gospel, and will try and side-track, distract from the message, or just attack and persecute the messenger. A lot of ignorant believers do Satan's work for them. You will discover that the message of the Lord, "you must be born again", is not a welcome one to the self righteous! The issue for the unbeliever is sin, righteousness and judgement, and the Holy Spirit convicts of all three. Get out of the Spirit's way and let Him do these things – you just preach the Word!

We preach the sin of rejecting Christ; the unbeliever is condemned because they do not believe on Him. We magnify the Cross, because we know the seriousness of it. They need to know the enormity of the sin of ignoring the Lord who died for them, if they reject his sacrifice for them.

The sin that puts them in hell is unbelief and pride (in that they trusted their righteousness rather than the blood of Christ), and the Holy Spirit will convict them of that. If you preach righteousness you must preach the righteous standard of God.

You preach of judgement because the prince of this world is judged. It is important to teach about hell and the consequences of the Great White Throne judgement. Jesus spoke more about Hell and eternal judgment than anyone else – follow Him and teach it clearly. People are held responsible for their actions by God, and this message is the 'flip side' of the good news of salvation, and so the rejecter needs to hear it.

There were many doctrines which were not taught in the three years of the Lord's ministry. The Lord teaches us by this, that doctrines must be learned slowly, as others, more basic and foundational, are applied. In your ministry you must build on the foundations slowly but systematically by thorough and regular bible teaching.

Young believers cannot learn everything overnight. We must grow in the grace and knowledge of Christ. Growth occurs slowly, by hearing, believing, applying and learning more. We may not see our spiritual children grow, for it may take many years. Others that do not even know them now may be the ones who see them grow. You need to feed on the spiritual food of God's word daily and apply it moment by moment to grow.

You must exercise. The Spirit will then lead you into locations where you have to apply it to your life. If you see a child that does not eat you see a child that does not grow, you see a child that is eventually dying. A child that does not exercise is sick, as is a child who does not speak to his parents. Just so in the spiritual realm, as in the physical, to grow, we need to feed and fellowship with our 'parents' and apply what they say and encourage us to do.

The Lord tells them this the night before He is going to the Cross. This is a time when Satan tries to side track the Lord from the Cross. Satan's attack since then has been to obscure the ministry of the Holy Spirit.

Satan always 'gets up' angry when he has been flattened by the Holy Spirit, when a believer has done something in the Holy Spirit's power. He hates us because of this, but while we walk in the Holy Spirit's power we are safe.

Satan holds the unbeliever in cords of darkness. When the believer gives the gospel the light comes in with power and Satan falls backwards. That person has a chance to leave Satan and enter into the kingdom of Christ and Satan hates and vigorously opposes the believer who delivers such messages of hope to those he has enslaved.

Verse 12. I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. 13. Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come. 14. He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you. 15. All things that the Father hath are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

Verse 12 shows the importance of teaching the Word. You need to teach people systematically point by point. Jesus is going to move on to tell the believers what they are going to do in the next few years. The Spirit is going to teach them everything that they are going to need to know.

Our Lord did not cover in His ministry everything that they were required to know. He was limited in what He told them. There was a lot of additional material they required but they were not yet able to deal with it at this point. The Spirit is therefore going to teach them over a period of time. Nearly sixty years after the Cross the Apostle John puts down his pen after completing the canon of Scripture under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit.

In Verse 13 Jesus says, I have told you everything that I intend to tell you up to this time. When He the Spirit will come he will lead you into all things. The Holy Spirit hears the Lord and communicates the new doctrines to the apostles. They will be communicating the words of the Lord Jesus Christ in writing through the Spirit. Paul, Peter, James and John all give words from the Lord, via the ministry of the Holy Spirit, with equal authority to those given by the Lord Himself while on the earth.

He is saying that He is speaking to them face to face here, and He will speak to them later through the Holy Spirit. Both are equally authoritative.

This underlines the need to ignore the so called, 'red letter' Bibles, that place the words of the Lord in red as if they are more important than the apostles words later in the epistles.

The Lord makes it clear that everything is of equal authority, for **it is all from him**. The false teachers of liberalism and the new and old cults can be spotted because they reject and down play the words of the apostles. Even today the pseudo-Jewish cultic groups refer to Paul's words as "midrash", but Jesus refers to the apostles words as "My words".

In these passages the Lord does not say anything about a number or type of subjects that are to come, because the disciples were not ready for this information. When you have a problem now, ask the following questions.

1. What did the Lord say when He was on earth? (Gospels)
2. What did the Lord say after He was in heaven? (Epistles, Revelation)
3. What did the apostles and early church practice? (Acts)

At that stage you should have a good idea what the Lord wants you to do in that situation.

The Lord calls himself the truth, **John 14:6**, and it is the Spirit of Truth that is coming. He is going to speak of Christ and He is going to give the Words of Christ. The Holy Spirit never speaks of Himself, the Spirit always points to Christ. There are many people who want to magnify the Spirit, but it is not biblical to do that. His job is to talk about Christ and get you into a living relationship with Christ. This is why prayer is to the Father, through the Son and in the power of the Holy Spirit.

In verses 14-15 Jesus Christ says that He is going to minister unto you the things that He wants ministered to you. Whenever you face the discernment problem you have to ask whether the group or action glorifies the Lord Jesus Christ.

When you look at a doctrine is it you or Christ who is going to be magnified. If Christ is not magnified the Holy Spirit is not in it. When the Holy Spirit is in it the Lord Jesus name is magnified, not the Spirit, nor yourself.

APPLICATION

Too many Christians do not realise that they are under orders and should be under the direction of the Spirit. You need to be sensitive to this situation. There is a lot of witnessing going on today that is not true witnessing, because it is based on human gimmicks rather than working with the Holy Spirit.

Everything in scripture is there for us to use and apply. Nothing is in the Bible for our use in heaven! When we get there we will find more to know. The Bible records what we need to know now!

Our sense of security and stability depends on the reality of our prayer life and Bible study, and the application of both throughout all the ups and downs of our daily life.

Do not expect everybody who names the name of Christ to be a believer. Many will come saying that they have done miracles in the Lord's name, many will cast out demons but the Lord will say that He did not know them and will tell them to depart from Him as workers of iniquity. **Matthew 7:13-23**.

This is where it is critical to know, believe and apply the Word of God to the situations we face. Many Christians think that they can have a good alternative to Bible study but you cannot get by without the hearing and learning of the doctrines of God.

These people feel that all they require is a social time and an experience at church. In that case you get to a hymn singing rotary club, and such emotional religion gives no stability when crises come.

Evangelism starts with prayer. It is that the unbelievers might see within them their need of a Saviour. You need to work with the Spirit in evangelism.

There is perfect order, a perfect design in creation. Creation tells us that there is intelligence. There is order in the physical realm. There is also order in the spiritual realm.

You have spiritual life, and eternal destiny with the Lord, and power to live now and forever to glorify the one who died and rose again! It is in this sphere of life that you should be living. If you are to be witnesses to the Lord you need to know the facts of the gospel, and live in the power of the resurrected Lord.

Do not think that things are going to be easy in life. There is no promise in the Word of God that spiritual life in the devil's world will be a bed of roses, but everywhere we are warned that this is a vale of tears!

The enemy is not going to let you give the gospel and glorify Christ by your life, without opposition and pressures.

DOCTRINES

HOLY SPIRIT - MINISTRIES OF THE HOLY SPIRIT NT – see page 42

SIN – UNPARDONABLE SIN

1. DEFINITION. This is the sin for which Christ did not die on the cross, and is the only basis for condemnation before the Lord at the last judgement.

It is the sin of volition of total and final rejection of the Lord Jesus Christ as Saviour and Lord. **John 3:18, 36.**

2. Rejection of the Lord is called "sin" in Scripture. **John 16:9.**

3. It is based upon rejection of the ministry of the Holy Spirit within. **Genesis 6:3, John 16:7-11, Hebrews 10:29.**

4. Those who have committed this sin believe the Bible message of salvation is foolishness. **1 Corinthians 1:18, 2:14.**

5. Synonyms for the unpardonable sin are:

Wilful sin - **Hebrews 10:26-31**

Blasphemy against the Holy Spirit - **Matthew 12:31**

Resisting the Holy Spirit - **Acts 7:51**

Insulting the Holy Spirit - **Hebrews 10:29**

6. This sin is characterised by "strong delusion", and has its own path of false religion/evil. **2 Thessalonians 2:11, 12, 2 Peter 2:19 -22, Romans 1:22-32.**

HOLY SPIRIT: SINS AGAINST THE SPIRIT

1. RESISTING THE HOLY SPIRIT (Unbelievers only) (**Acts 7:51, John 16:8-11**) This is hardening to the convicting ministry of the Holy Spirit.

2. BLASPHEMY AGAINST THE HOLY SPIRIT (Unbelievers only) (**Matthew 12:31**) The purpose of the Holy Spirit was to reveal the person of Jesus Christ. The Pharisees rejected this by claiming He was demon possessed.

3. LYING TO THE HOLY SPIRIT (Believers only) (**Acts 5:1-3**) A sin of false motivation. - Ananias and Sapphira.

4. GRIEVING THE HOLY SPIRIT (Believers only) (**Ephesians 4:30**) Any sin which the believer commits.

5. QUENCHING THE HOLY SPIRIT (Believers only) (**1 Thessalonians 5:19**) A believer who is not allowing the Holy Spirit to exert His full influence.

6. UNPARDONABLE SIN (**Matthew 12:22-32**)

- a) Rejection of Jesus Christ as God and Saviour is the only sin which cannot be forgiven. This unbelief is shown in **Matthew 12:24**, denying the person and power of Jesus.
- b) It is impossible for a believer to commit the unpardonable sin. (**Isaiah 1:18, Isaiah 44:22, 1 John 1:7**)

ANGELS: SATAN'S DESTINY

1. Satan is called a "prince" indicating that he had his own power and followers. (**John 12:31, 14:30, 16:11, Ephesians 2:2, 2 Corinthians 4:4**)
2. Yet he is still a creature, and is still ultimately subject to God (**Job 1:12**)
3. At the cross, Christ defeated Satan, as his main power was through sin and death. (**John 12:27-32, Romans 5:12, 1 Corinthians 15:54-56, Colossians 2:14-15, Hebrews 2:14-15**)
4. God purpose with the world is not yet complete - therefore the enforcement of Satan's defeat will not take place until the end of the Millennium (**Hebrews 1:13, Revelation 20:10**)
5. Satan's final judgment is sure:-
 - a) When he fell he was condemned, this was before (**Genesis 1:2**).
 - b) In the garden the certainty of God's judgment was announced. (**Genesis 3:15**)
 - c) The Cross was his final defeat. (**John 12:31, Colossians 2:14-15**)
 - d) In the midst of the Great Tribulation his access to heaven will be stopped. He will no longer be able to slander believers. (**Revelation 12 :7-12**)
 - e) At the Second Advent he is arrested and bound. (**Revelation 20:1-3**)
 - f) After the Millennium he is briefly released to lead the last great rebellion against God, and is finally cast into the Lake of Fire. (**Revelation 20:10**)
 - g) There are therefore four falls of Satan:-
 - i) from his place in eternity past to the earth with access to heaven.
 - ii) then that access is denied causing him to be restricted to the Earth.
 - iii) he is then contained in Hades for a thousand years.
 - iv) then his final fall into the Lake of Fire.
6. Satan has six abodes in his journey from the throne room of God to the Lake of Fire.
 - a) The Throne of God - **Ezekiel 28:12**
 - b) The Mineral Garden of Eden - **Ezekiel 28:13**
 - c) The Atmospheric Heavens - **Ephesians 2:2, 6:12**
 - d) The Earth - **Revelation 12:7-12**
 - e) The Abyss - **Revelation 20:1-3**
 - f) The Lake of Fire - **Revelation 20:7-10**

CHRISTIAN LIFE - BACK-SLIDING AND RECOVERY

1. Definition - falling from the standard of living that the Lord calls us to and living at a lower level of belief, behaviour, and emotion. Living in a state of embarrassment at the gospel, thinking as an unbeliever would.
2. The Lord knows who are his, we don't. **2 Timothy 2:19**. A backslider is out of fellowship, and may resemble an unbeliever in every way yet still be saved. They are like the prodigal son. **Luke 15:3ff**. These people are different (although they appear to be the same) to religious unbelievers. **2 Peter 2:1 -22, Jude 4 - 13, 18, 19, 22**.
3. The Lord desires these people to be restored. **Matthew 18:12 -14, Luke 15:3 -32**. In the Old Testament this message is also clear. **Hosea 4:14-19, 11:7, 8, 14:1-4, Jeremiah 2:19, 3:6, 8, 11, 12, 14, 22, 5:6, 8:5, 14:7, Jeremiah 31:22, 49:4**.
4. Believers who are "offended" at the Word have failed to grow spiritually **John 6:61 -63, Matthew 11:6, 1 Corinthians 10: 13, Matthew 13:21, Mark 4:17, John 16:1, Matthew 24:9, 10**.

5. The disciples all were offended at the Lord at his death. **Matthew 26:31, 33-35, cf. 67-75.**
6. Falling from grace is another way of expressing backsliding. **Colossians 1:23, Galatians 5:4, 2 Peter 3:17.** It means to fall from a place where you stand for grace and adopt an inferior way of living the Christian way of life, like legalism.
7. God disciplines the backslider, but their eternal security is secure. **Hebrews 12:5 -13, 16, 17, 1 Corinthians 3:12-15, 1 Peter 1:4, 5, 2 Timothy 2:11- 13, John 1:12, Ephesians 1:13.**
8. The Lord is able to keep us from falling, although we can walk away from his provision by following our pride rather than his truth. **Jude 24. 1 Corinthians 10:11 -14, 1 Timothy 3:6, 7.**
9. At the end of the church age the Lord prophesied that there would be a time of almost total backsliding on the part of the organised church. **2 Thessalonians 2:3, 1 Timothy 4:1- 6, 2 Timothy 4:3, 4.**
10. The Lord warns all backsliders very directly in **Revelation 2:5.** No fruit for too long = sin unto death! **John 15:1-5.**

11. Backsliding and Recovery

Seven Steps Downwards

- a. Trifling with Sin **Romans 13:14**
- b. Yielding to Sin **Romans 6:13**
- c. Habitually Serving Sin **2 Peter 2:8**
- d. Abandoning Ourselves to Sin **Ephesians 4:19**
- e. Being Abandoned by God to Sin **Romans 1:24, 26, 28**
- f. Encouraging Others to Sin **Romans 1:32**
- g. Experiencing Hell on Earth **James 3:6, 1 Timothy 5:6**

Seven Steps Upwards

- a. Resisting Sin in our Attitudes **James 4:7**
- b. Overcoming Sin by Faith in Christ **Galatians 5:16**
- c. Habitually being Victorious over Sin **Romans 6:14, 1 John 5:4-5**
- d. Entering into the Secret of a Victorious Life Hid with Christ in God **Romans 8:37, 2 Corinthians 2:14, Colossians 3:1-3**
- e. Being Taken by God into Deeper Fellowship **1 Timothy 1:12, 1 Corinthians 4:2**
- f. Delivering Others from Sin. **Jude 22-23**
- g. Experiencing Heaven on Earth **Jude 24-25, Philippians 4:6-7**

HARMONY

THE OTHER COMFORTER

But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me: And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

PERSECUTION OF BELIEVERS

These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended. They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service. And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me. But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you. But now I go my way to him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou? But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart.

MINISTRY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgement: Of sin, because they believe not on me; Of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more; Of judgement, because the prince of this world is judged.

I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come. He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you. All things that the Father hath are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

146 I – PREDICTIONS OF CHRIST’S DEATH AND RESURRECTION - JOHN 16:16-33

John 16:16 A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father. 17 Then said some of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me: and, Because I go to the Father? 18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith. 19 Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye enquire among yourselves of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me? 20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. 21 A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world. 22 And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you. 23 And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you. 24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full. 25 These things have I spoken unto you in proverbs: but the time cometh, when I shall no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father. 26 At that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you: 27 For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God. 28 I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father. 29 His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no proverb. 30 Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God. 31 Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe? 32 Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. 33 These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.

KEY WORDS

Little while	Mikron	A small space of time
See	Theoreo	See, To view attentively [Present Active Indicative]
Again	Palin	Again
See	Optomai	See, Watch from a distance [Future Middle Indicative]
Because	Hoti	Because
Go	Hupago	Go
Father	Pater	Father
Said	Epo	See [Present Active Indicative]
Disciples	Mathetes	Disciple

Is	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
See	Theoreo	See, To view attentively [Present Active Indicative]
See	Optomai	See, Watch from a distance [Future Middle Indicative]
Go	Hupago	Go [Present Active Indicative]
Said	Lego	See [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Is	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Saith	Lego	See [Present Active Indicative]
Cannot tell	Eido	Perceive, Understand [Perfect Active Indicative]
Saith	Laleo	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Knew	Ginosko	Know [Aorist Active Indicative]
Were desirous	Thelo	Desire [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Ask	Erotao	Ask [Present Active Infinitive]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Enquire	Zeteo	Enquire [Present Active Indicative]
Among	Meta	Among
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
See	Theoreo	See, To view attentively [Present Active Indicative]
See	Optomai	See, Watch from a distance [Future Middle Indicative]
Verily	Amen	Point of doctrine
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Shall weep	Klaio	Weep [Future Active Indicative]
Lament	Threneo	Lament [Future Active Indicative]
World	Kosmos	World
Rejoice	Chairo	Rejoice [Future Passive Indicative]
Sorrowful	Lupeo	To be sad [Future Passive Indicative]
Sorrow	Lupe	Sorry
Turned	Ginomai	Come into being [Future Middle Indicative]
Joy	Chara	Joy
Woman	Gune	Woman
Is in travail	Tikto	Be in labour [Present Active Subjunctive]
Hath	Echo	Have and hold [Present Active Indicative]
Sorrow	Lupe	Sorrow
Hour	Hora	Hour
Come	Erchomai	Come [Aorist Active Indicative]
As soon as	Hotan	As soon as
Delivered	Gennao	Is delivered [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Child	Paidon	Child
Remembereth	Mnemoneuo	Remember [Present Active Indicative]
Anguish	Thlipsis	Anguish, Trouble
Man	Anthropos	Man
Born	Gennao	Born [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Have	Echo	Have and hold [Present Active Indicative]
Will see	Optomai	See [Future Middle Indicative]
Heart	Kardia	Heart
Shall rejoice	Chairo	Rejoice [Future Passive Indicative]
No man	Oudeies	No one
Taketh	Airo	Take away [Present Active Indicative]
Day	Hemera	Day
Ask	Erotao	Ask [Future Active Indicative]
Nothing	Oudeies	Nothing
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Shall ask	Aiteo	Ask [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Name	Onoma	Name
Give	Didomi	Give [Future Active Indicative]
Asked	Aiteo	Ask [Aorist Active Indicative]
Ask	Aiteo	Ask [Present Active Imperative]
Receive	Lambano	Receive [Future Middle Indicative]
Be	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Subjunctive]
Full	Pleroo	Full [Perfect Passive Participle]
Spoken	Laleo	Speak [Perfect Active Indicative]
Proverbs	Paraimia	Proverbs, Parables

Time	Hora	Time, Hour
Cometh	Erchomai	Come [Present Middle Indicative]
Speak	Laleo	Speak [Future Active Indicative]
Shall shew	Anaggello	Show [Future Active Indicative]
Plainly	Parrhesia	Openly
Shall ask	Aiteo	Ask [Future Middle Indicative]
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Pray	Erotao	Request, Pray [Future Active Indicative]
Himself	Autos	Himself
Loveth	Phileo	Love [Present Active Indicative]
Loved	Phileo	Love [Perfect Active Indicative]
Believed	Pistueo	Believe [Perfect Active Indicative]
Came out	Exerchomai	Come out from [Aorist Active Indicative]
Came forth	Exerchomai	Come out from [Aorist Active Indicative]
Come into	Erchomai	Come [Perfect Active Indicative]
Leave	Aphiemi	Leave [Present Active Indicative]
Go	Poreuomai	Make a journey, Go [Present Middle Indicative]
Said	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Speakest	Laleo	Speak [Present Active Indicative]
Speakest	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Are sure	Eido	Know [Perfect Active Indicative]
Knowest	Eido	Know [Perfect Active Indicative]
Needest	Echo	Have and hold [Present Active Indicative]
Any man	Tis	One
Ask	Erotao	Ask [Present Active Subjunctive]
Believe	Pistueo	Believe [Present Active Indicative]
Camest from	Exerchomai	Come out from [Aorist Active Indicative]
Answered	Apokrinomai	Answer [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Do ye now	Arti	This day
Believe	Pistueo	Believe [Present Active Indicative]
Cometh	Erchomai	Come [Present Middle Indicative]
Come	Erchomai	Come [Perfect Active Indicative]
Shall be scattered	Skorpizo	Scatter [Aorist Passive Subjunctive]
Every man	Hekastos	Every one
Own	Idios	Own, this relates to the non attendance at the Athens democratic meeting where the person involved was considered to be an idiot.
Leave	Aphiemi	Leave
Alone	Monos	By themselves, Alone [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Am	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Is	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Spoken	Laleo	Speak [Perfect Active Indicative]
Might have	Echo	Have and hold [Present Active Subjunctive]
Peace	Eirene	Peace
Shall have	Echo	Have and hold [Present Active Indicative]
Tribulation	Thlipsis	Tribulation
Be of good cheer	Tharseo	Have courage, Be of good cheer [Present Active Imperative]
Overcome	Nikao	Overcome, Get the victory [Perfect Active Indicative]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS

ERCHOMAI – COME, COME TO PASS – Occurs 641 times in the New Testament with only 21 times in the Perfect Tense. The Perfect Tense is predominantly in the Gospels and always in the Active Voice. It occurs twice in Mark and Acts , four times in Luke, eleven times in John, once in both Philippians and 1 John. Mark 9:13 is the first of a series of perfect tenses which relate to the rejection of God’s Plan. Here Jesus says that Elijah has come but was badly done by and rejected, He further says in Luke 7:33 That John the Baptist was rejected as demon possessed and He Himself rejected as a glutton and winebibber in Luke 7:34. Jesus said that He had come into the world as the Light John 12:46 but men loved darkness John 3:19, He had come in His Father’s name and had been rejected John 5:43 and that He had come forth from God but they rejected Him John 8:42. He had come with a permanent result which had divided the believer and unbeliever.

LALEO – TO SPEAK - Occurs 298 times in the New Testament with 14 appearances in the Perfect Tense. In John 6:63 Jesus says that the words He “speaks” are spirit and are life. Jesus said that the Jews seek to kill Him, a Man who had “told” them, the truth from God John 8:40. However in John 9:29 the Jews say that they know that God “spoke” to Moses but do not know about Jesus.

Addressing the disciples at the Last Supper in John 15:3 Jesus tells them that they are all clean because of the words He had “spoken” to them already while in John 15:11 that the words “spoken” to them was so that their joy might be full and peace rule their hearts. John 16:33. In John 16:1 the words “spoken” were so they should not stumble, in John 16:4 when the time comes they may remember them but noted that because He had told them of His departure at this stage they were sorrowful. John 16:6. In **John 16:25** Jesus said that He had been speaking in parables but would now “speak” plainly, and in John 18:20, that He had always “spoken” openly in the synagogues when asked about His doctrines by the High Priest.

NIKAO – OVERCOME - Occurs 28 times in the New Testament with three times appearing in the Perfect Tense. In **John 16:33** the Lord Jesus Christ has once and for all permanently overcome the world. The young men of 1 John 2:13 are said to permanently overcome the wicked one. In 1 John 4:4 as believers we overcome the world because of the indwelling Holy Spirit.

OIDA, EIDO – TO KNOW – Occurs 251 times in the Perfect Tense in the New Testament and is by far the largest with Grapho next at 96 occurrences. Because of the mixture of “knows” and “don’t knows” and different characters ranging from the Trinity, through the Disciples of Christ, Religious Leaders, and even to demons the review of this verb is given in each verse they occur.

PHILEO – FAMILY LOVE occurs 25 times in the New Testament but only once in the Perfect Tense. Not surprisingly in **John 16:27** we see God the Father having a permanent personal love for the believers who have become His children because of their belief in the Lord Jesus Christ.

PISTEUO – TO BELIEVE - Occurs 248 times in the New Testament with 18 times in the Perfect Tense with 15 times being in the Active Voice. In the Passive Voice it means to be Committed. Half of these occur in the Gospel and letters of John. The merit in believing is in what one believes in as shown in John 3:18 where he that believes in Christ is not condemned which the person who does not believe is condemned already because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. This is repeated in John 6:69 where Peter states they have come to believe that Jesus is the Messiah, the Son of the Living God.

In John 8:31, Jesus said to those Jews who believed Him, “If you abide in My word you are my disciples indeed”. Martha in John 11:27 said that she believed that Jesus was the Messiah. In **John 16:27** Jesus said that the Father loved the disciples because they had loved Him, and believed that He had come from God. In John 20:29 Jesus notes that Thomas had seen and believed.

In Acts 15:5, believing Pharisees questioned about the requirements of the Mosaic Law in conjunction with believers as did the Jerusalem Church after Paul had returned from Ministering to the Gentiles resulting in many believing in Acts 21:20 and Acts 21:25. Conversion excited the Jailer and his family at Philippi in Acts 16:34 and many in Ephesus Acts 19: 18 who had believed and came confessing and telling of their deeds.

Being committed to telling the gospel had importance in Corinth as seen in 1 Corinthians 9:17, and in Galatia where it was specifically to the Gentiles. Galatians 2:7. Paul says in 2 Timothy 1:12, I am not ashamed for I know whom I have believed and am persuaded that He is able to keep that which I have committed until that day. In Titus 3:8, Paul says those who have believed in God should be careful to maintain good works. In the passage, 1 John 4:16, the Apostle John says that we have known and believed the love that God has for us and that in 1 John 5:10, the believer has a witness in himself.

PLEROO – FILLED, FULFILLED, COMPLETE – Occurs 95 times in the New Testament with 18 times in the Perfect Tense in ten books. With John the Baptist in prison Jesus, in Mark 1:15, tells His listeners that the time is fulfilled and the kingdom of God is at hand. He reinforces this in Luke 4:21 where, after reading a short passage of Isaiah He said “Today this Scripture is fulfilled in your hearing”. However in John 7:8 with the Feast of Tabernacles was at hand but Jesus was not going up with the disciples because His time had not yet fully come. In John 16:6, at the Last Supper, Jesus said that the new that He was going away had **filled** their hearts with sorrow and later in **John 16:24**, invites His disciples to ask in His name so that their joy might be full. In John 17:13, Jesus addressing His Father saying that these things I speak in the world that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED AT THE FIRST COMING OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

ITEM	OLD TESTAMENT	DESCRIPTION	FULFILMENT
1461	Isaiah 9:6	The Prince of Peace	John 16:33

REFLECTION

Verse 16. A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father. **17.** Then said some of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me: and, Because I go to the Father? **18.** They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith. **19.** Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye enquire among yourselves of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me? **20.** Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. **21.** A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world. **22.** And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you.

In verses 16-22 the Lord Jesus Christ warns of what is to come. For a while they will continue to see Him, then they will not see Him. He says that for a while the disciples will lament but their sorrow will turn into joy.

When Jesus will be crucified, the disciples will be overwhelmed by sorrow and fear. Others such as Caiaphas and Annas will be happy because they will think that they have had a great victory. This state of affairs lasts for three days, while the tomb is guarded by the armed group from the Temple Police.

After the three days however the world will mourn and be confused, and the disciples will rejoice for the whole of eternity. The tables are turned. This state of affairs continues today, the Cosmos world system of the satanic may appear to be winning now, but it will lose in the long run. Forget media reports – look up!

You will have joy in the morning. It was the resurrection that changed the men and women that went to the tomb. The Bible is His book and we must know it and apply it in our lives and practice it in joy. This chapter should be paired with **Romans 6. 1 Corinthians 15:16-22.**

The topic at the end of this vital chapter on witnessing is, comfort and security for the believer. The joy of the resurrection reality is the power and assurance behind our giving of the gospel. But at this point the disciples do not know what He is telling them! The perfect tense of verse eighteen tells us that they are in perfect confusion about things at this point, and that fog will only clear on resurrection day, and even then, only slowly. Lets not be too hard on these men, for they are facing a unique event, that has still only occurred once in history – and so they have no frame of reference – but they have His Word and that will become more precious as they go through the next years.

In verses 20 - 22 the disciples will be broken men the next day, but within three days they will be in joy and within fifty days they will emerge to the world with a message that will transform the world, the resurrection message!

Verse 23. And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you. **24.** Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full. **25.** These things have I spoken unto you in proverbs: but the time cometh, when I shall no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father. **26.** At that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you: **27.** For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God. **28.** I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father.

In verses 23 - 24 they have been told that the Lord's return from the dead will bring joy, now they are told how to get even more joy, or 'complete joy', and the perfect tense tells us that the results of spiritual joy is forever. This reminds us of **Romans 5:1 - 11**, where Paul speaks of the 'much more' love of the Lord for us.

The doctrine and reality of the resurrection will give them joy, but there is even more joy through answered prayer. Powerful, Holy Spirit led, and focused prayer always produces answers that will fill up the soul with joy. This involves a maturity of faith and a closeness of fellowship with the Lord, where the believer is thinking God's thoughts and so every prayer is in accord with the will of the Father. What Jesus has spoken is forever, and they will understand that as they mature in Christ Jesus.

The Lord's will for us is clear from **John 15:24**; He wants us to have joy filled up within us. He wants us to receive his joy. The Greek verb in this verse is in the perfect, passive subjunctive, indicating firstly the permanent results of prayer, secondly the fact that we receive joy from God, and thirdly that it is a matter of choice. The subjunctive mood reminds us that we may decide not to apply the Word of God and so miss out on the blessings that are ours through powerful prayer. The next verses repeat a principle that we have seen before; the unity of the Father and Son in the plan of salvation for mankind.

In verses 25 - 28 the Father does not need to be persuaded or cajoled to answer prayer offered in accord with His will and revealed plan. Prayer is not laying hold of God's reluctance, it is the confident application of God's revealed desires towards his children. Prayer is not, and must not sound as if it is, grovelling, pleading and begging! Believing prayer is relaxed and confident, even in the midst of adversity, suffering, loss, and pain!!! **Matthew 6:7**.

Our prayers should not resemble pagan's prayers in any way! We should not be leaping about with raised voices and dramatic gestures like the prophets of Baal. In contrast to their antics we should be calm, confident, stable, and secure in our approach to God. If we sound like the prophets of Baal we are out of line 100%!

A good study of what to do and what not to do is found in the following incident in the life of Elijah. **1 Kings 18:16 - 39**. Believing prayer is an expression of confident fellowship, with its stability coming from the understanding of God's Word.

It's source of power being the application of our assurance, which stems from knowing God's policy and plan and our destiny forever with him. Their love for the Lord and their belief in His Word are both expressed in the perfect tenses, and the Lord is strongly reminding them of the lasting results of both their love and their faith, for the two things are inter-related. Their love for the Lord will bear fruit in their later lives, and with their faith, grounded in the Cross and Resurrection they will achieve things they would not have though possible at this point.

Verse 29. His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no proverb. 30. Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God. 31. Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe? 32. Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. 33. These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.

In verses 29 - 33 the disciples are overjoyed and believe they can see His meaning clearly now, and their confidence is expressed in the perfect tenses, but the results of the future events will indeed last forever. They are wrong, but they will be sorted out by events, and so the Lord doesn't correct them here. Their statement in verse 30 is a surprise, for the Lord has said other even more direct things that this, but here they all re-affirm their faith in the Lord's Messiahship. That remains the key for us all – it is remembering who HE is that matters. Once we are grounded in the truth about the fact that HE is IMMANUEL we are on the solid ground we need to be facing great pressures.

In verses 31 - 33, the Lord identifies that they will all be blown away by events, but that will be alright for they will learn. Their scattering will not be the end. This is a wonderful thing, our failures do not stop the Lord's use of us; once we have confronted our failures He will pick us up and lift us back to the heavenlies where we belong!

Be warned by these verses believer, the disciples are filled with emotional enthusiasm, but they will still fall apart within hours! Emotion does not protect or prepare you for trials, only knowledge of and belief in the facts will protect you from despair. God's plan is going to work out, and our stability is in direct proportion to our faith in that fact! Pressures will come at times, but the day of God's grace provision will dawn – the Plan cannot fail, because it is God's Plan.

We need to read and reread verse 33 for a good reason. So many forget, that the Lord does not promise us a clear run in life. It will not be a trouble free stroll through the Garden of Eden! We are not in Eden, but serving the Lord in the midst of the enemies camping ground, the fallen world! There are troubles, trials, and attacks, but there is the filling of the Holy Spirit, God's Word to guide, and Jesus presence at all times.

The prosperity gospel preachers are liars of the worst kind, for they set believers up to be knocked over by pressures. We may suffer and we may die for the Lord and His truth, but there is blessing and joy in the midst of this awfulness, if we, like the early church, apply verses like these.

Peace in the midst of pressure is the Lord's promise to his disciples, not freedom from troubles!!! The Lord has given them doctrinal teaching in order that they may 'have peace'. This is the present, active subjunctive of the verb, 'echo', meaning 'to have and hold'. The subjunctive mood again reminds us that this peace is only potentially the believer's possession. They must apply the Word of God to their life ahead of their fears. God's Word must be more real than our fears, and that remains our challenge each and every day.

The Lord's next words are also direct; 'Be of good cheer'. Literally, 'keep on being courageous!' Present, active, imperative, of 'tharseo'. This was the command of the general to troops before battle.

The reason for such a command of the Lord to us all, is that He has 'overcome the world' as shown in the perfect, active indicative of, 'Nikao.' He has overcome the world in the past with the result that He has overcome it forever. The running shoes are named after this Greek verb, Nike, the god of victory.

Note the form of the verb here; this is absolute assurance, "Jesus has spoken" – Perfect tense- the results go on forever, the Lord has done it, it is sure! He has "overcome the world" – Perfect tense – what he has already done sets the stage for the Cross and Empty Tomb and He will be victorious. They have absolute assurance – God has "got this"! Satan is defeated – he was defeated from eternity past – it is being played out in space-time. Can we get a tiny glimpse of this way of seeing things?

APPLICATION

We should take our problems to the Lord in prayer.

The resurrection should change us too as we recognise our new life in Christ Jesus whether it is through His words in the gospel, or through words of the disciples made alive by the Holy Spirit.

In summary let us get the seven principles of prayer clear in our minds:-

1. Only believers can pray meaningfully (exception - 'Lord save me!'). **John 15:7.**
2. Prayer must comply with the principle of resting in faith, **Matthew 21:22, Mark 11:24**
3. Prayer must be in accord with God's revealed will, **1 John 5:14.**
4. Person praying must be in fellowship, **Ephesians 6:18.**
5. Prayer in not answered with sin in the life, **Psalms 66:18.**
6. Must comply with grace, but we may boldly approach the Lord in grace, **Hebrews 4:16.**
7. Should be accompanied with thanksgiving, **1 Thessalonians 5:18, Romans 8:26-28.**

Because Christ has overcome the world we in union with Him are overcomers.

DOCTRINES**CHRISTIAN LIFE: OVERCOMER**

1. Definition of an overcomer - "For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God? **(1 John 5:4, 5)** It is seen that an overcomer is a believer and we become overcomers at the point of salvation.
2. "To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God" - believers will live with God in heaven forever. **(Revelation 2:7)**
3. "He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death" - believers will not be subject to the lake of fire. **(Revelation 2:11)**
4. "To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it" - believers are accepted by God on the basis of His provision. **(Revelation 2:17)**
5. "And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers: even as I received of my Father. And I will give him the morning star" - believers will rule over the nations and will be honoured. **(Revelation 2:26-28)**
6. "He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels" - believers are justified and sanctified by the death of our Lord and their names are permanently in the book of the living. **(Revelation 3:5)**
7. "Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name" - believers will have access to the Holy Places of God and will eternally be identified with Jesus Christ. **(Revelation 3:12)**
8. "To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne" - believers will reign with the Lord Jesus Christ **(Revelation 3:21)**

CHRISTIAN LIFE: OVERCOMING BY FAITH

1. By faith learn to accept conditions as God's will for life and be thankful - **Romans 8:28, 1 Thessalonians 3:3; 5:18**
2. By faith maintain fellowship with God, walking in the light - **1 John 1:7**
3. By faith consistently day by day examine your conduct, confessing all known sins - **1 Corinthians 11:28, 31 1 John 1:9**
4. By faith receive the Word of God daily as being more necessary than daily food. - **Matthew 4:4; 5:6, 2 Peter 3:18**
5. By faith approach the throne of grace boldly in every case of need, requesting aid, casting every care on Him. - **Hebrews 4:15-16; 1 Peter 5:7**
6. By faith resist the attempts of Satan and he will flee from you. - **Ephesians 6:10-13, 1 Peter 5:8**
7. By faith maintain the habit of thinking and meditating on spiritual values and priorities - **Philippians 4:6-9**
8. Walk by faith and not by sight - **2 Corinthians 5:7**

PARABLES

1. A parable is a short narrative from which a spiritual message is deduced.
2. All parables are from the life and time of Christ.
3. The parable gives an outward story which either a believer or an unbeliever can understand.
4. They also teach a truth, only believers who know Him who is Truth, can understand. Only believers can understand Spiritual Truth. **(1 Corinthians 2:14)**
5. The interpretation of these parables requires deduction compatible with known truth.
6. The characters or incidents are figurative or typical.
7. Proper names or specific geographical locations are never used in parables. Thus the rich man and Lazarus in Hades is a true story.
8. Parable - para bole - to throw together. It signifies a placing of one thing beside another with a view to comparison.

PARABLES OF CHRIST

PARABLES	PLACE	REFERENCES
Parable of the Sower	Capernaum	Matthew 13:1-23
Parable of the Tares	Capernaum	Matthew 13:24-43
Growing Seed	Capernaum	Mark 4:26-29
Grain of Mustard Seed	Capernaum	Matthew 12:31, 32
Leaven	Capernaum	Matthew 13:33
Found Treasure	Capernaum	Matthew 13:44
Precious pearl	Capernaum	Matthew 13:45-46
Net	Capernaum	Matthew 13:47-50
Two Debtors	Capernaum	Luke 7:36-50
Unmerciful Servant	Capernaum	Matthew 18:21-35
Samaritan	Near Jericho	Luke 10:25-37
Rich fool	Galilee	Luke 12:13-21
Servants who waited for their Lord	Galilee	Luke 12:35-48
Barren Fig Tree	Galilee	Luke 13:6-9
Lost Sheep	Galilee	Luke 15:3-7
Lost coin	Galilee	Luke 15:8-10
Prodigal Son	Galilee	Luke 15:11-32
Dishonest steward	Galilee	Luke 16:1-12
Unjust Judge	Paraea	Luke 18:1-8
Pharisee and publican	Paraea	Luke 18:9-14
Labourers in the vineyard	Paraea	Matthew 20:1-16
Pounds	Jericho	Luke 19:12-27
Two sons	Jerusalem	Matthew 21:28-32
Vineyard	Jerusalem	Matthew 21:33-46
Marriage feast	Jerusalem	Matthew 22:1-14
The Virgins	Jerusalem	Matthew 25:1-13
Talents	Jerusalem	Matthew 25:14-30
Sheep and the Goats	Jerusalem	Matthew 25:31-46

PERSECUTION

1. From the beginning of time the good have been persecuted by the evil, the believer by the unbeliever, the spiritual by the carnal. (**Genesis 4:5-8, 37:23, Exodus 1:10ff, Matthew 5:12, Luke 11:47-51, Acts 7: 52**)
2. Hatred of godly people comes from their silent conviction of sin in the lives of those who are disobedient. (**John 3:16-36, 15:22-25, Hebrews 11:38, 1 John 3:12**)
3. Jesus warned his followers that they would face persecution. (**Matthew 5:11, 12, 44, 10:23, Luke 11:49, 21:12, Mark 4:17, John 15:20, 21**)
4. The Lord was persecuted unto death.
5. The early church faced persecution very soon after the resurrection. (**John 20:19, Acts 3, 4, 6, 7, 9, 12**)
6. The apostles were persecuted. Of all the apostles, only John died a "natural" death - all of the others were martyred. (**Acts 9:1-3, 12:1-5, 1 Corinthians 20:19, 2 Corinthians 11:23 ff.**)
7. Persecution refines and strengthens faith. (**James 1:2-4**)
8. All who have suffered persecution for the Lord's sake will receive a crown of reward and eternal blessing. (**John 16:33, Revelation 6:9-11, 8:9-17, 20:4, 5**)

CHRISTIAN LIFE – DESTINY OF BELIEVERS

1. He who believes in Jesus Christ has eternal life now (**1 John 5:11-13**). He will never die (**John 11:25, 26, John 8:51**)
2. Believers are said to "fall asleep" at their death (**1 Thessalonians 4:14**). The soul departs to be consciously present with Christ, but the body "sleeps" in the grave until the resurrection (**2 Corinthians 5:6-8**)
3. When Christ comes at the Rapture, the bodies of those in Christ shall be raised from the dead (**1 Thessalonians 4:16, 1 Corinthians 15:20-23**)
4. Our physical bodies will be replaced by immortal bodies (**2 Corinthians 5:1-4**) - conformed to the body of Christ (**Philippians 3:20-21**)
5. We shall be like him (**1 John 3:2**) seeing His glory and reflecting it in ourselves (**Colossians 3:4, John 17:22**).
6. We will be rewarded because of works of faith (**Luke 19:12-19**) which will vary in proportion to our faithfulness in serving God (**Matthew 6:20, 1 Corinthians 3:11-15**)
7. In the Millennial Kingdom, we shall reign with Christ as priests of God and Christ (**Revelation 20:6**).
8. To the overcomer (**1 John 5:4-5**) Christ will give to eat of the tree of life (**Revelation 2:7**) and shall not be hurt by the second death - the lake of fire (**Revelation 2:11**). He will be given authority to rule over nations (**Revelation 2:26-27**) Jesus will acknowledge the believer before God (**Revelation 3:4-5**) who will be made a pillar in the temple of God. (**Revelation 3:12**) and will be seated with Christ in His own throne. (**Revelation 3:21**)
9. God will wipe away all tears from his eyes; sorrow, crying, pain, and death shall be no more (**Revelation 21:4**)
10. We shall know all things perfectly (**1 Corinthians 13:12**)
11. We will receive an incorruptible inheritance. (**1 Peter 1:3-5**) kept by our all powerful God in heaven.

UNBELIEVER

1. God is Holy and cannot compromise with sin or evil. (**Psalm 22:1-3, John 1:5**)
2. Sin is solved at the Cross for all. (**1 John 2:2**)
3. The way is therefore open to all who will believe. (**John 3:16, 36, Acts 16:31**)
4. Those who reject Christ are without hope, promise and God in the world. (**Ephesians 2:12, Romans 5:14, 17, 6:23**)
5. We are born dead to God. (**Psalm 51:5**)
6. It is only through Christ that we can be born again. (**John 14:6**)
7. The unbeliever spurns this grace offer and the Lord who died for him. (**Hebrews 2:1-4**)
8. God is Love, but when love is spurned, that person has chosen darkness rather than light. They are therefore judged on the basis of their works as they have rejected the Lord's work for them. (**John 3:16-21, Revelation 20:11-15**)
9. The first stop for the unbeliever after death is Torments in Hades or Sheol. This is a place of regret, torment and anguish. It is also called the bottomless pit. (**Revelation 9:2**)
10. Their ultimate state is the Lake of Fire after they have been judicially sentenced to it by the Lord Jesus Christ at the Last Judgement where they are judged according to their works. (**Revelation 14:11, 20:11-15, Matthew 8:12, 25:41, Mark 9:44, Jude 13**)

CHRISTIAN LIFE – STABILITY

1. God is able to keep us and bless us (**Ephesians 3:20, Hebrews 7:25**).
2. Stability comes when we know God; when we have grown up in his Word. Maturity brings with it stability (**2Peter 3:18, 2Timothy 1:12**).
3. The alternative to a stable life of faith is to be tossed about by every pressure; this occurs when there is no doctrinal application in the life (**James 1:6, Ephesians 4:14, Revelation 3:8**).
4. Believers need stability to stand fast against the wiles of Satan who is a danger to those with no doctrine: We are told to:
 - a) Stand fast in the word **1Corinthians 16:13**.
 - b) Stand fast in our liberty **Galatians 5:1 cf. Romans 14:1ff, 8:9-13**.
 - c) Stand fast in one spirit (no pettiness) **Philippians 1:27**.
 - d) Stand fast in the Lord (in fellowship) **Philippians 4:1**.
 - e) Stand fast in doctrine **2 Thessalonians 2:5, 16, 17**.
5. Strength and stability comes in a close relationship with the Lord. By faith we stand: **2 Corinthians 1:24, Psalm 59:17, 62:7, 144:1**.
6. God has supreme power at His fingertips for us. **Isaiah 59:1**.
7. Our faith should stand secure in this power, for we are kept by it in all things, therefore we should be confident. **1Corinthians 2:5, 1Peter 1:5, John 16:33**.

8. God is able to make us stand through the work of the Holy Spirit upon the word in our lives. **Romans 14:4, Jude 24.**

9. Strength and stability come from the impact of the Holy Spirit's work upon the word in our life as we believe and apply it, e.g. Sarah **Hebrews 11:11**, Paul **2 Corinthians 12:8-10.**

10. Profile of the stable believer under pressure **2 Peter 1:3-16.**

HARMONY

PREDICTION OF CHRIST'S DEATH AND RESURRECTION

A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father. Then said some of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me: and, Because I go to the Father? They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith.

Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye enquire among yourselves of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me? Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world. And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you.

PRAYER TO THE FATHER THROUGH CHRIST

And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you. Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full. These things have I spoken unto you in proverbs: but the time cometh, when I shall no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father. At that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you: For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God. I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father.

THE DISCIPLES UNDERSTAND BUT WILL FAIL

His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no proverb. Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God. Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe? Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.

146 J – CHRIST PRAYS FOR HIMSELF - JOHN 17:1-5

John 17:1 These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour **is come**; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee: 2 As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he **should give** eternal life to as many as thou hast given him. 3 And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent. 4 I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which **thou gavest me** to do. 5 And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

KEY WORDS

Words	Tauta	These
Spake	Laleo	Speak [Aorist Active Indicative]
Lifted up	Epaïro	Lift up [Aorist Active Participle]
Eyes	Ophthalmos	Eye
Heaven	Ouranos	Heaven
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Father	Pater	Father
Hour	Hora	Hour
Come	Erchomai	Come [Perfect Active Indicative]
Glorify	Doxazo	Glorify [Aorist Active Imperative]
Son	Uihos	Son
May glorify	Doxazo	Glorify [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Has given	Didomi	Give[Aorist Active Indicative]
Power	Exousia	Power, Authority
Flesh	Sarx	Flesh
Should give	Didomi	Give [Perfect Active Indicative]
Eternal Life	Aioniois Zoe	Eternal Life
As many as	Pas Hos	As many as
Hast given	Didomi	Give [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Is	Eimi	Keeps on being [Present Active Indicative]
Life eternal	Zoe Aioniois	Life eternal
Might know	Ginosko	Know [Present Active Subjunctive]
True	Alethinos	True
God	Theos	God
Christ	Christos	Anointed one, Messiah
Sent	Apostello	Sent [Aorist Active Indicative]
Glorified	Doxazo	Glorify [Aorist Active Indicative]
Earth	Ge	Earth
Finished	Teleïo	Complete, Finish [Aorist Active Participle]
Work	Ergon	Work
Gavest	Didomi	Give [Perfect Active Indicative]
Do	Poïeo	Do [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Glorify	Doxazo	Glorify [Aorist Active Imperative]
Glory	Doxa	Glory
Had	Echo	Have and hold [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Before	Pro	Before
World	Kosmos	World
Was	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Infinitive]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS

DIDOMI - GIVE – The verb occurs 413 times in the New Testament, with 36 times in the Perfect Tense. On 26 occasions it is in the Active Voice, leaving 10 in the Passive. The vast majority of the Perfect Tenses occur in the Gospel of John with 24, and with 3 in 1 John, and this accounts for 75% of the occurrences.

ERCHOMAI – COME, COME TO PASS – Occurs 641 times in the New Testament with only 21 times in the Perfect Tense. The Perfect Tense is predominantly in the Gospels and always in the Active Voice. It occurs twice in Mark and Acts , four times in Luke, eleven times in John, once in both Philippians and 1 John.

Mark 9:13 is the first of a series of perfect tenses which relate to the rejection of God's Plan. Here Jesus says that Elijah has come but was badly done by and rejected, He further says in Luke 7:33 That John the Baptist was rejected as demon possessed and He Himself rejected as a glutton and winebibber in Luke 7:34. Jesus said that He had come into the world as the Light John 12:46 but men loved darkness John 3:19, He had come in His Father's name and had been rejected John 5:43 and that He had come forth from God but they rejected Him John 8:42. He had come with a permanent result which had divided the believer and unbeliever.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED AT THE FIRST COMING OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

ITEM	OLD TESTAMENT	DESCRIPTION	FULFILMENT
146J	Genesis 49:10	Called Shiloh or One Sent	John 17:3
	Psalms 69:26	The Saviour given and smitten by God	John 17:4
	Isaiah 53:10d	He would prosper	John 17:1-5
	Zechariah 3:8	God's Servant	John 17:4

REFLECTION

The central topic of chapter 16 was witnessing in the power of his resurrection. The scene shifts now, from looking out to the world we move inwards into the heart of the Lord before the cross. This chapter contains the real Lord's Prayer for us. The one that occurs earlier is from Matthew and is more correctly called the disciple's prayer.

There are three parts to chapter 17.

v 1-5 - The Lord prays for himself and the glorification which is the Father's will for Him through the Cross.

v 6-19 - The Lord prays for His disciples.

v 20-26 - He prays for all future believers.

The prayer recorded in this chapter indicates that the Lord had us personally in mind as he went to the cross.

Lewis Sperry Chafer says of verses 1-5, "This passage embodies the prayer of Christ and the reasonable conclusion is that it is the normal pattern of that prayer that Christ continues to pray in heaven for us. The request of the Son to the Father on behalf of the safe keeping of those who are saved can be refused by the Father only on the supposition that Christ's prayer might not be answered."

So this prayer indicates to us what the Lord is saying in heaven today and we can rest assured that such prayers as the Lord prays are answered with a strong and everlasting, 'YES - amen!'

Here in John 17 we have a pattern, an example of what he is praying for us in heaven, of what His will is, and how He expresses Himself. This is one prayer that you can guarantee is answered, as we know that He was praying in accordance with God's will.

We will look at a number of other verses as we enter this passage for it is so important for us to understand what is going on here.

Looking firstly at **Romans 8:34**, **Hebrews 7:25**, we see that our Lord has never stopped praying for us. This is the prayer in John 17 that takes you to the Lord's heart desire for you, to the true Holy of Holies. This is the place where God meets with each woman and each man.

In **Romans 3:21-26** God has declared us righteous through the Cross. In John 17 the Lord is a few hours from the Cross, and yet He pours his heart out for each of us. All these things are in the Lord's mind as He is preparing to go to the Cross, where He is going to solve the sin problem for all of us. His witness has been completed. He is about to complete the work of salvation so that unrighteous people can be justified by grace through faith.

In **Hebrews 12:1-3** it is clear that the Lord knew what was going to be involved in the Cross. Most messages on Hebrews 12 tend to deal with the physical suffering of the Lord but He was not so worried about the physical suffering as the spiritual separation from God that bearing our sin would involve. He was going to be separated from the Father and the Spirit for the first and only time in eternity, as He took our sin upon Himself. He became sin, who knew no sin, that we might live victorious over sin. **2 Corinthians 5:21**.

He was thinking about the sin bearing that He is going to endure. It was a holy horror to our Lord when He contemplated taking our sin. He knew how awful it was going to be to bear the sin of you and me. Through the awfulness of the sin bearing role God will be however glorified and we will have the way of salvation opened up for us, but it will be through His abused body, through His blood shed for us.

Romans 12:1-3 – “Let us look at the Cross afresh”, Paul asks here. Let us remember that our faith is based on what He endured there to deal with sin, as we remember what sin did to Him. This is another passage where we see what He has in mind when He goes to the Cross.

Hebrews 4:14-16 - Theologically all these passages are connected, and in this chapter it is important that it is noted that verse 16 follows verses 14 and 15. You as a Christian will only ever fulfil verse 16 when you have seen your Lord as He is, the great High Priest on the Cross. When you see what He went through, only then will you be able to hold fast your profession of faith. This is when you see what He was thinking on the Cross and what the meaning of it and Gethsemane was.

The Lord and the disciples are about to come into the Garden of Gethsemane as we end Chapter 16. On the way the Lord had a time of prayer. They moved down the Kidron valley and crossed the brook and headed towards the Garden where they are in chapter 18 as the enemy comes. They heard this first prayer but did not hear the prayers in the Garden of Gethsemane, for they were nearly all asleep. The Lord explains all this to them after His Resurrection, and John notes it for his Gospel sixty years later.

In the ancient world the rabbis taught thoroughly and with repetition. This was not taken into consideration in the period of Higher Criticism which came out of Germany in the eighteenth and nineteenth century. They made the error of interpreting the Scriptures as if the people involved were Germans or those with European minds. These disciples are not European, they are Semitic. They thought differently, were taught differently and had different learning skills and habits. They were very literate and were used to feats of memory that still amaze us today.

In the European nations literacy came only in the last 1000 years, and for most of the population only in the last 100 years, whereas the Semitic peoples have been literate for over 4000 years. In Jesus day nearly every young Jewish boy, and most girls, was taught to read and write.

These people had also been taught by the rabbis to memorise significant passages, their memory had been educated and when they were taught they listened to what was taught, and were able to recall things far better than we are today, unless we have been trained. When the rabbis taught, they did so using memory techniques, by using stories, illustrations, and rhymes, with repeated stories and even rhyme.

When the Greek New Testament was translated back into Aramaic, which was the language that the Lord spoke it was found that the Lord's words in many places rhymed and that the Lord was teaching them in the form of a rabbi, a title by which He was often called by the unbelievers, and even His own at times.

This method would enhance the memories of the disciples. As part of their culture all Jewish boys who wanted to be really respected had to learn by heart the Torah, and if they were proceeding to work as a rabbi they had to know sections of the whole Old Testament by the age of 30. In the Jewish and Arab world this still continues in some quarters.

All the disciples made notes very soon after the resurrection. They were literate and had learned to read and write, and to memorise, therefore we can be confident that we have the words of our Lord here. The German critics however thought erroneously that the Jews worked from an oral tradition only. The truth is otherwise; most of the time that they talked they would have had a book in their hands, either their Bible (The LXX), and later the Talmud or Mishnah. John probably had this prayer written down for many years before he wrote his Gospel, and I suspect he treasured this prayer from the time the Lord explained it to them after the Resurrection.

Verse 1. These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee: **2.** As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him. **3.** And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent. **4.** I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do. **5.** And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

Verses 1-5 show the consequences of the victory of the Lord on the Cross. This is the most positive prayer in Scripture. He is absolutely confident about what the Cross is going to achieve. It is going to achieve what the Father intended it to achieve. Our Lord is in control here. There is no evidence at all that He has lost control of events. It is not a tragedy; the Cross is a victory. The events are not tragic they are dramatic and are also wonderful because of what they achieve. It is awful in its horror and terrible in its pain but it is the glorification of God in its provision of salvation for man.

Jesus says, "Father the hour is come" - we are coming to the climax says the Lord. The verb to come is in the perfect tense which means that the events that are happening here will have results that will go on forever. Here the Father is going to be glorified through the Saviourhood and Lordship of Christ at the Cross.

The key part of the incarnation is that he has come to die for the sins of the world. The cross is no accident, as the cultic and liberal groups claim. Refer to **John 1:29, 3:14, 15, 6:51, 10:11, 11:49 - 52, 12:24, 15:13, 14.** Also refer, **Matthew 16:21, 17:22, 23, 20:17 - 19, 26:12, 28, 31, Mark 9:32 - 34, 14:8, 24, 27, Luke 9:22, 44 - 45, 18:31 - 34, 22:20, John 2:19 -21, 10:17 -18 , 12:17.**

Verses 2 - 3 show that the Lord has the power (Greek - exousia = authority) to achieve all that is required to be achieved this day, and He will defeat Satan, and sin and death will be vanquished. As the creator He always had the authority, but here He records that as the God-Man, as Immanuel he is taking charge, and He is going to His destiny; He has been given authority as the Saviour and Lord of all. **Romans 10:12, 1 Timothy 6:15.**

The Lord wins, what in the ancient world was referred to as, the 'battlefield royalty', title of "Lord of all", through the cross. **John 5:22 -27, 9:39, 12:31.** Every knee shall bow before Him due to what He has done on the cross. **Isaiah 45:23, Romans 14:11, Philippians 2:10.** We should note the reference to the, 'ones you have given to me', reminding us of the doctrine of election from **John 6:36 - 47.** Once again the verb "given" is twice in the perfect tense, reminding us of that great mystery doctrine, that is hard to understand because it comes from eternity past; that we are chosen in Christ Jesus from before space and time were made – that we are a gift from the Father to the Son – that we are as secure as we possibly can be. Our eternal security is secured in the mind of God itself!

In verse 3 we see the challenge, that we should live our life as we are capable of in the filling of the Holy Spirit, realising that the moment we believe we have eternal life, and we keep on having eternal life. Getting to know Jesus Christ in your Christian walk is the best possible preparation for eternity. Heaven will make its dwelling place in you as you concentrate on Him and His path for your life. The more we fellowship with Him the more sure we are of heaven, and the more stable we are in time. **2 Timothy 1:7.**

Jesus in verse 4 says that He has finished the work that the Father has given Him. Everything that needed to be done had been done. This is the unique person of the universe speaking, the God – Man, Jesus Christ. Unlike the Lord you cannot say that this present day we are living, is the greatest day of our lives, because we do not know what is ahead.

The Lord knew what was ahead. The Cross and Empty Tomb are the key focal points in all of history, and through the terrible pain of this He knew it was the greatest day of history = all that Adam lost was recovered, and more beside.

In the future people are going to look back to the Cross and say how wonderful the Plan of God was in that the Lord in grace saved those that were lost and will all sing the song, "Holy Holy Holy". The Lord is saying, let the world see it - the glory of the Cross. Not all will be saved but there will be a day when every knee shall bow and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord.

Even the unbelievers in hell will see what they refused to accept, how the glory of the Cross is supreme, and in horror and awe accept what the Lord has done for them, but that they have refused to accept it.

The Lord Jesus Christ has power. He has power over all flesh and has the power to give eternal life. The Lord knows who are His. You are God's and He is doing with you what He wills. His purpose was to save mankind and only those who will not believe will be lost. Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and you shall be saved.

If you put **John 6:36-40,44,77** together with John 17 you have salvation by faith from the Lord Jesus Christ. By grace Jesus Christ has provided salvation for all people who come in faith. If you come in faith you are given as a gift from the Father to the Son.

The Son says that He will raise each believer up at the last day. Your everlasting life started the moment that you accepted the Lord Jesus Christ as Saviour. You are going to enter heaven one day, but until that moment we rest secure in His arms. The Lord has power and gives eternal life. It goes on forever. Are you living in the certain knowledge of God's eternal life for you? This is the daily joy of the mature believer.

If you lost all your family, what would you do? Would you claim the doctrine of everlasting life, the doctrine of heaven, or would you go mad? The Lord says that He gives everlasting life. **2 Samuel 12:19-23**.

Eternal life starts now and the Lord is shown as the one who is sent. He is the apostolos. The original meaning of this word was in relation to the admirals of the Greek fleet. At the time Athens was a pure democracy and as such the people voted for the admiral who would be in charge of the large fleet that Athens commanded. He was the sent one, or the apostolos in charge of the other admirals.

There were twelve apostles of the church with the Lord Jesus Christ as the leader. Jesus words, '*I am the way the truth and the life no man cometh to the Father except by me*'. There is no other name under heaven whereby we might be saved. - **John 14:6, Acts 4:12**. If you do not have a relationship with Christ you do not have a relationship with God.

The great lie of liberalism is that all religions are worshipping the one God. All cults and unbelieving hymn singing Rotary Clubs claim to be worshipping the biblical God, but they deny who He truly is. **James 2:19-26**. The Lord Jesus Christ is the only one who provides salvation, the only path to the one true God is through Christ Jesus; there is no other way.

In verse 4 the Lord talks about the Cross in a way that is so certain, that it is as if it was done in the past. He says that He, "*has finished the work which though gavest me to do*". We know that on the Cross the Lord said, "*It is finished*". It is not a contradiction. He is speaking of His work knowing that it is going to be finished.

It is the aorist, active, indicative of "doxazo". Doxa is glory, doxazo is the verb meaning to glorify. This means that at all points of time when the opportunity has arisen the Lord has glorified the Father. In every point in His life and in everything that He has done He has glorified the Father.

Aorist, active, participle of "teleoo". It is the same root word that He is going to use on the Cross – tetelestai - "It is finished" - which is the perfect tense of the word teleoo. Everything that the Lord has done has completed the plan of God. What He says is, 'I have been completing or finishing the plan of God'. It is so certain that the work is finished, that he notes the completion in advance of the cross. It is a reminder that space-time are creations, and the Lord's perspective is from beyond space-time.

Only one who is God can pray this prayer outlined in verse 5. Here again we see the deity of the Lord as God. The Lord Jesus Christ is both God and man. This makes a lie to the Unitarian belief system. The Lord is praying this prayer on the basis of His deity. He is saying, 'Glorify me by thyself with a glory which belongs to the Godhead so that I may reveal You even more in and through My death'. 'I want to be glorified with you in the same way as I was before the world began'.

Remember the Lord's words in **John 8:58** - 'before God was I AM'. By application anyone who wants to see the glory of God needs to see Christ. From this verse, and John 17, we know that in the Cross we see the glory of God.

Chafer says in his systematic theology, "From everlasting the Son has participated in the essential glory that belongs to deity. The glory is that of dignity, perfection and infinite blessedness. God being immutable, this glory cannot change. The dating of this glory should not be unobserved, it is before the creation of the world".

Hebrews 13:8 tells us that, "Christ is the same today, yesterday, and forever". He is the same because He is God. There is no reason why the Lord's Prayer cannot be answered, and by this we know it is fully answered and that means we are perfectly secure.

At verse 5 the prayer changes. For the first five verses the Lord prays for Himself but in verses 6 to 25 our Lord is praying for you and I. He spends five verses on Himself and twenty one verses on us. His love and concern for us as He faces the Cross, the greatest testing of any person in history, is shown by the amount of time He spends praying for us.

Another important feature of the prayer is that the total concentration is on the glorification of God. We should say that we wish to be the way that the Lord wants us to be, and that all our prayers are focused on bringing glory to God. That is safe ground to pray from.

APPLICATION

If you do not see answered prayer in your life, the problem is probably not with the prayers you are praying, it is with your own life.

This prayer forms our basis, as Christians, for absolute assurance and for our eternal security.

It is very important to check Scripture with Scripture. If you have a difficult passage you should seek a parallel passage so that you may be able to interpret the more difficult passage.

Take your time and read other chapters which reflect on it. In this regard the book, "The Treasury of Scripture Knowledge", by H Heaton, is very valuable.

The purpose of the Cross is the glory of God. The Father will be glorified by the Lord's perfect obedience at the Cross.

You have eternal life now. You got it, by Grace, through faith in Him.

You are a gift from the Father to the Son. We have adoption and election in focus here.

If you were within an hour of the greatest crisis in your life which was going to result in your death would you spend twenty percent of your time praying for yourself and eighty percent on others?

This is a good guide as to how much time you should spend praying for others if you are doing it correctly.

DOCTRINES

CHRIST: DEITY OF CHRIST

1. Jesus Christ is both God and man. The two natures are inseparably united without mixture or loss of separate identity, the union being personal and eternal. (**Philippians 2:5-11, John 1:1-14, Romans 1:4, Romans 9:5, 1 Timothy 3:16**)

2. Jesus Christ is undiminished deity. This includes all the divine characteristics:

a) Sovereignty (**Genesis 1, Revelation 1:5, 6, 17:14, 19:16**)

b) Eternal Life (**Isaiah 9:6, Micah 5:2, John 1:1-2, 8:58, Colossians 1:16-17, Ephesians 1:4, Revelation 1:8**)

c) Holiness (**Luke 1:35, Acts 3:14, Hebrews 7:26**)

d) Love (**John 13:1, 34, 1 John 3:16**)

e) Unchangeable (**Hebrews 13:8**)

f) All Knowing (**Matthew 9:4, John 2:25, John 18:4, 1 Corinthians 4:5, Colossians 2:3, Revelation 2:23**)

g) All Powerful (**Matthew 24:30, 28:18, 1 Corinthians 15:28, Philippians 3:2 1, Hebrews 1:3, Revelation 1:8**)

h) Everywhere (**Matthew 28:20, Ephesians 1:23, Colossians 1:27**)

i) Truth (**John 14:6, Revelation 3:7**)

3. Christ is the Son of God, equal with the Father and the Holy Spirit (**Matthew 28:19, 2 Corinthians 13:14, 1 Peter 1:2**)

4. Proofs of the deity of Christ.

- a) He is the Creator of all. (**John 1:3, 10, Colossians 1:16, Hebrews 1:10**)
- b) He is the Preserver of all things. (**Colossians 1:17, Hebrews 1:3**)
- c) He pardons sin. (**Luke 5:21, 24**)
- d) He raises the dead. (**John 5:21, 28-29, 11:42-43**)
- e) He will reward the saints. (**2 Corinthians 5:10**)
- f) He will judge the world in the Last Day. (**John 5:22**)
- g) He receives worship (**Hebrews 1:6**)

5. Jesus Christ is Jehovah.

- a) Jesus is God. (**Isaiah 9:6; John 1:1; John 20:28; 2 Peter 1:1; Titus 2:13**) Jehovah is God. (**Jeremiah 32:18; Isaiah 43:10; 45:22; Philippians 2:10**).
- b) Jesus is I AM (**John 8:24; 8:58; 13:19; 18:5**). Jehovah is I AM (**Isaiah 43:10; Exodus 3:13-14; Deuteronomy 32:39**).
- c) Jesus is the First and the Last (**Revelation 1:17; 2:8; 22:13**). Jehovah is the First and the Last (**Isaiah 44:6; 48:12; 41:4**).
- d) Jesus is the Rock (**1 Corinthians 10:4; Isaiah 8:14; 1 Peter 2:6; Matthew 16:18**). Jehovah is the Rock (**Exodus 17:6; Isaiah 17:10; 2 Samuel 22-32; Deuteronomy 32:4**).
- e) Jesus is Saviour (**Acts 2:21; 4:12; Romans 10:9; Jude 25**). Jehovah is Saviour (**Psalms 106:21; Hosea 13:4; Isaiah 45:21; 43:3, 11**).
- f) Jesus is Lord of Lords (**Revelation 17:14; 19:16; 1 Timothy 6:14-16**). Jehovah is Lord of Lords (**Psalms 136:1-3; Deuteronomy 10:17**).
- g) Jesus is Creator (**John 1:3; Colossians 1:15-17; Hebrews 1:10**). Jehovah is Creator (**Job 33:4; Isaiah 40:28; Genesis 1:1**).
- h) Jesus is Light (**John 8:12; John 1:9; Luke 2:32**). Jehovah is Light (**Micah 7-8; Isaiah 60:20; Psalm 27:1**).
- i) Jesus is Judge (**2 Timothy 4:1; 2 Corinthians 5:10; Romans 14:10**). Jehovah is Judge (**Genesis 18:25; Joel 3:12**).
- j) It is quite clear that Jesus is God (**1 John 5:5**)

6. Jesus lived on earth in total dependence upon God the Father. He never used His own divine attributes in contradiction to the will of the Father. (**Matthew 4:1-11, 27:42-43**)

7. At the birth of Christ no change occurred in the deity of Jesus Christ. During His earthly life, some attributes were unused but they were never deleted or destroyed. To remove any attribute from His deity would be to destroy deity.

8. Jesus Christ is true humanity. This includes attributes such as thirst, hunger, weariness. (**John 19:28**)

9. Jesus Christ had a body, soul and spirit, but no old sin nature. He did not receive an old sin nature because of the virgin birth.

10. God became flesh; it is not a case of God merely possessing humanity.

CHRIST: DEITY OF CHRIST AND THE BELIEVER

1. He was creator of all. **John 1:3, 10, Colossians 1:16, Hebrews 1:10**.

2. He is the preserver of all things. **Hebrews 1:3, Colossians 1:17**.

3. He pardons sin. **Luke 5:24, Colossians 3:13**.

4. He will raise the dead as he was raised, **2 Corinthians 1:9, John 5:21, 28, 29, John 11:25**,

5. He will reward the saints. **2 Corinthians 5:10**.

6. He will judge the world in the last day. **John 5:22, Revelation 20:12**.

7. Worship which is rightly given only to God is rightly given to Him as God. **Psalm 95:6, John 5:23, Luke 24:52.**

GOD: ELECTION AND PREDESTINATION

1. The Biblical concept of predestination does not conflict with human freewill.
2. Christ was predestined for a specific purpose from eternity past - to go to the cross and be raised to glory (**Isaiah 42:1, 1 Peter 2:4-6, Acts 2:23**)
3. All members of the human race are potentially elect by the Father under the concept of unlimited atonement. (**2 Peter 3:9, 1 John 2:2**)
4. When a person trusts in Christ for salvation, he is united with Christ and therefore shares His election and destiny (**1 Corinthians 1:2, 30, Romans 8:28, 32, Ephesians 1-4**)
5. Election is closely linked with foreknowledge. In eternity past, God knew who would believe, He therefore predestined them, called them, and they were saved (**Romans 8:29-30, 2 Timothy 1:9**)
6. Therefore, election and predestination applies to the believer only. No person is predestined for hell - it is a choice of freewill (**John 3:18, John 3:36**).
7. Election is a present and future possession of every believer. (**John 15:16, Colossians 3:12**)
8. Election is also the foundation of the universal church. (**1 Thessalonians 1:4**)
9. There are five Greek words used in conjunction with predestination.
 - a) Pro Orizo - to predesign (**Romans 8:28, 29, Ephesians 1:5, 11**)
 - b) Protithemi - to predetermine (**Romans 3:25, Ephesians 1:9**)
 - c) Prothesis - a predetermined plan (**Romans 8:28, 9:11, Ephesians 1:11, 3:11, 2 Timothy 1:9**)
 - d) Proginosko - to foreordain, to preordain. (**Romans 8:29, 11:2, 1 Peter 1:20**)
 - e) Prognosis - foreknowledge or predetermined purpose (**Acts 2:23, 1 Peter 1:2**)
10. The life of Judas is a good illustration of predestination and freewill.
 - a) God's call is to all people, His desire is that all will be saved. (**Matthew 28:18-20, John 3:16 1 John 2:2, 3:23**)
 - b) God is long suffering towards the lost, not willing that any should perish. (**2 Peter 3:9**)
 - c) God's call is to all, but people must respond. (**John 3:36, 16:8-11**)
 - d) God's call is of love. (**Jeremiah 31:3, John 3:16**)
 - e) Those who resist become hardened in their souls and open to Satanic influence or possession. (**Romans 1:20-32, 2 Thessalonians 2:9-12**)
 - f) Judas was chosen in love by the Lord (**Matthew 10:1-4, John 13:18**) and received the sop of the honoured guest and sat at the Lord's right hand at supper.
 - g) However Judas was a thief and a traitor. (**John 12:6, 13:18**)
 - h) As an unsaved man he was involved in evangelism. Others were probably saved through his reading of the word but he was not. (**Matthew 10:1-8**)
 - i) He became the Son of Perdition by his decision, he could not blame anyone else (**John 17:12**)

CHRISTIAN LIFE: - ADOPTION AS A CHILD OF GOD

1. In Biblical times adoption was a token of maturity when a person changed from adolescence to adulthood in a family.
2. When a son of a Roman family was at the age of maturity his father enacted a ceremony to symbolise the son's acceptance by the family as an adult member (cf **Ephesians 1:5**).
3. Our position in Christ (**Ephesians 1:4,5**) shows that every believer shares Christ's position as an adult son of God.

4. Adoption occurs when we are "born again", at the point of salvation (**John 3:3-7, John 1:12, Galatians 3:26**).

5. Because of our adoption we now have a new relationship with God. (**Galatians 4:5-6, Romans 8:15**).

6. There is a future aspect of adoption - resurrection, inheritance and ultimate sanctification (**Romans 8:23, 1 Peter 1:3-5**)

HARMONY

CHRIST PRAYS FOR HIMSELF

These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee: As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him. And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent. I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do. And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

146 K – CHRIST PRAYS FOR HIS DISCIPLES - JOHN 17:6-19

John 17:6 I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they **have kept** thy word. 7 Now **they have known** that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee. 8 For **I have given** unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me. 9 I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou **hast given me**; for they are thine. 10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and **I am glorified** in them. 11 And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom **thou hast given me**, that they may be one, as we are. 12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that **thou gavest me** I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. 13 And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy **fulfilled** in themselves. 14 **I have given them** thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. 16 They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 17 Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. 18 As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. 19 And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might **be sanctified** through the truth.

KEY WORDS

Manifested	Phaneroo	Show, Manifest, Declare [Aorist Active Indicative]
Name	Onoma	Name
Men	Anthropos	Man
Gavest	Didomi	Give [Aorist Active Indicative]
Out of	Ek	Out of
World	Kosmos	World
Were	Eimi	Keep on being [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Gavest	Didomi	Give [Aorist Active Indicative]
Kept	Tereo	Keep [Perfect Active Indicative]
Word	Logos	Word
Known	Ginosko	Know [Perfect Active Indicative]
All things	Pas	All
Whatsoever	Hosos	Whatsoever, What
Given	Didomi	Give [Perfect Active Indicative]
Are	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Given	Didomi	Give [Aorist Active Indicative]
Words	Rhema	Word, Saying
Gavest	Didomi	Give [Perfect Active Indicative]

Received	Lambano	Receive [Aorist Active Indicative]
Known	Ginosko	Know [Aorist Active Indicative]
Surely	Alethos	Truly
Came out	Exerchomai	Come out [Aorist Active Indicative]
Believed	Pisteuo	Believe [Aorist Active Indicative]
Didst send	Apostello	Send out[Aorist Active Indicative]
Pray	Erotao	Pray, Request [Present Active Indicative]
Pray	Erotao	Pray, Request [Present Active Indicative]
Given	Didomi	Give [Perfect Active Indicative]
Are	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Are	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Are mine	Emos	Of me
Glorified	Doxazo	Glorify [Perfect Passive Indicative]
Now I am	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
More	Eti	More
Are	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Come	Erchomai	Come [Present Middle Indicative]
Holy	Hagios	Holy
Father	Pater	Father
Keep	Tereo	Keep [Aorist Active Imperative]
Given	Didomi	Give [Perfect Active Indicative]
May be	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Subjunctive]
Are	-	Not in the original
Was	Emen	Was [Imperfect Middle Indicative]
Kept	Tereo	Keep [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Gavest	Didomi	Give [Perfect Active Indicative]
Kept	Phulasso	Isolate, Guard [Aorist Active Indicative]
Is Lost	Apollumi	Lost, Destroy [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Son	Uihos	Son
Perdition	Apoleia	Loss, Ruin
Scripture	Graphe	Writings
Fulfilled	Pleroo	Fill, Fulfil [Aorist Passive Subjunctive]
Come	Erchomai	Come [Present Middle Indicative]
Speak	Laleo	Speak [Present Active Indicative]
Might have	Echo	Have and hold [Present Active Subjunctive]
Joy	Chara	Joy
Fulfilled	Pleroo	Fulfil [Perfect Passive Participle]
Given	Didomi	Give [Perfect Active Indicative]
Word	Logos	Word
Hated	Miseo	Hate [Aorist Active Indicative]
Are	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Am	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Pray	Erotao	Request, Pray [Present Active Indicative]
Shouldest take	Airo	Take out [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Shouldest keep	Tereo	Guard, Keep [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Evil	Poneros	Evil
Are	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Am	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Sanctify	Hagiazo	Sanctify, Make holy [Aorist Active Imperative]
Truth	Aletheia	Truth
Word	Logos	Word
Is	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Sent	Apostello	Send [Aorist Active Indicative]
Sent	Apostello	Send [Aorist Active Indicative]
For their sakes	Huper autos	For their sakes
Sanctify	Hagiazo	Sanctify, Make holy [Present Active Indicative]
Sanctified	Hagiazo	Sanctify, Make holy [Perfect Passive Participle]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS

DIDOMI - GIVE - This verb occurs 413 times in the New Testament with 36 times in the Perfect Tense. On 26 occasions it is in the Active Voice leaving 10 in the Passive. The vast majority of the Perfect Tenses occur in the Gospel of John with 24, and with 3 in 1 John, which accounts for 75% of the occurrences.

DOXAZO – GLORIFY – This verb occurs 62 times in the New Testament with 5 occasions in the Perfect Tense all of which are in the Passive Voice meaning that the glory is received. The verses which are in the Perfect Tense show that glory which lasts is from God.

GINOSKO – TO KNOW – Occurs 222 times in the New Testament, of which 18 times are in the Perfect Tense. It is one of 8 Greek verbs translated “Know” and has the emphasis of taking in knowledge, to come to know, recognise, understand or understand completely.

In the Garden of Gethsemane Jesus Christ confirms that the disciples know that all things which, “The Father has given Him are from the Father”. **John 17:7**. Paul tells the Corinthians that had the rulers of this age really known who Jesus was, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. 1 Corinthians 2:8

HAGIAZO – SANCTIFIED, MADE HOLY - Occurs 29 times in the New Testament of which 10 are in the Perfect Tense. They are all in the Active Voice with the Participle Mood predominating. In **John 17:19** the Lord Jesus Christ says that He is sanctified so that the believers may receive sanctification. The source of the sanctification is seen in Hebrews 10:10 in the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

PLEROO – FILLED, FULFILLED, COMPLETE – Occurs 95 times in the New Testament with 18 times in the Perfect Tense in ten books. With John the Baptist in prison Jesus, in Mark 1:15, tells His listeners that the time is fulfilled and the kingdom of God is at hand. He reinforces this in Luke 4:21 where, after reading a short passage of Isaiah He said, “Today this Scripture is fulfilled in your hearing”. However in John 7:8 with the Feast of Tabernacles being at hand, Jesus was not going up to Jerusalem with the disciples, because His time had not yet fully come. In John 16:6, at the Last Supper, Jesus said that they knew that He was going away, and it had **filled** their hearts with sorrow, and later in John 16:24, He invites His disciples to ask in His name so that their joy might be full. In **John 17:13**, Jesus addressing His Father saying that, “these things I speak in the world that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves”.

TEREO – TO HAVE AND HOLD, KEEP, RESERVE - Occurs 75 times in the New Testament with 9 times in the Perfect Tense The first occurrence is John 2:10 at the Marriage in Cana where the Master of the Feast was surprised that the best wine had not been kept. In John 15:10 and **John 17:6** the Lord Jesus Christ states that He had always kept the Father’s commandments and His Word.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

Verse 6. I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word. 7. Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee. 8. For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me. 9. I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine. 10. And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them.

In verse 6 we see that the Lord’s ministry to the disciples has been perfect and successful. The only one that has been lost is the one that has not been found true to his appearance. This is Judas Iscariot. Note the perfect tenses in this section. “Keeping” the Word is a permanent blessing, and the results of growing into the Word and living in its sphere of power result in forever blessings.

Those who “have known” truly who the Lord is have results flowing forever for them, but for Judas, who rejected who the Lord was, the results are sadly also forever in judgment. The glorification of the Lord is also forever, and we share that forever, with eternal rewards to be enjoyed, and with temporal blessings right now, as we walk with Him now.

Our life, as Children by Faith, is “hid with Christ in God”, and the blessings go on forever. The Lord says to the Father, 'You gave them Me'. We see this again in this verse. All these disciples are going to fail within a couple of hours but He is going to be able to say that they have kept your Word. This shows the Lord's grace. If we had got what we deserved we would have been judged and be dead long ago. The Lord deals with us in grace – and we thank God for that....

The word keep is tereo, which means to keep or guard, obey, trust, lean on, to guard something that is of value. If you had a new vehicle you would put it in the garage. How valuable is God's word to you. Christians say that they love the Word, but sadly it is only on Sunday. We need to guard the Word day by day, and as we treasure the Word in our heart and apply it into daily life we will know His peace and joy.

In verse 7 the disciples know now that everything done by the Lord is done for the Father's glory and in accord with the Father's will. We are within a closed plan and secure within it, just as the Lord was facing His death. **Colossians 3:3.**

Verse 8 shows that the word of the Gospels are important to you. If you want to get to know your heavenly Father, get reading the words of our Lord and Saviour. His Word proves who HE is! How do you prove that Christ is God and the Father and the Son are one? You ask yourself could a mere man do this. He came forth from the Father. He was sent as the supreme authority. He is the source of doctrine; He is the source of worship. He speaks of His place as the authority, from the Father the source of all true faith.

The Lord Jesus Christ tells you to pray to the Father in His name, in the power of the Spirit. If you say 'Dear Jesus', you are disobedient to the Lord Jesus Christ. It is a simple thing to get it right, so do things properly! When you say 'Dear Jesus this', or 'Dear Holy Spirit that', it is not Biblical. When Jesus was on earth it would have been appropriate for the disciples to address requests to Him personally, but now He is in heaven at the right hand of the Father making intercession for us, we speak to the Father, because that is what Jesus tells us to do. Do what you are told believer!

We pray to the Father in the name of the Son and in the power of the Holy Spirit. The Lord sits at the right hand of the Father saying in response to each prayer that is received there - that prayer is in accordance with My will and it will be answered. He is absent from us in the body now, but present in the spirit. You should not say, O Holy Ghost, or Dear Jesus, for by so doing you are not glorifying the Father, and you are not obeying the clear instruction of the Lord. In the disciple's prayer the Lord Jesus Christ prayed to the Father and asked that the name of the Father be hallowed. The whole of Scripture zeros in at this point.

We pray to the Father, in the name of the Son, and in the power of the Holy Spirit. In that way we involve the whole of the Trinity. The Spirit glorifies Christ, Christ glorifies the Father; everything is pointing towards the glorification of the Father, and the Plan. Remember, God is neither male nor female but He expresses Himself in masculine terms in the Scriptures. Remember there is no gender in Christ Jesus for us either – we are all “one in Christ Jesus”. **Galatians 3:28-29.**

When you know how someone thinks about you, you are perfectly able to assess how you stand with that person. John 17 shows us perfectly how we stand with Christ. We see what He thinks of us, we see the answered prayers He prays for us, we see the perfect stability of our position of 'beloved' with Him for ever.

If you are a disciple of Christ – “mathetes” - it is because you are a believer in Christ, and through faith have a new position with Him. You are a disciple or learner or follower.

The word disciple indicates a position of subservience to authority, which is opportunity for growth and service, the place where we can learn and fellowship more and more, and this opportunity will remain our special privilege until we die. The Lord's desire for the disciples is expressed in this chapter, that we might have security, stability and sanctification.

Within these things is where the fruit of the Holy Spirit grows to fullness. The fruit only comes when you are secure, stable, and sanctified, in moment by moment fellowship with Him. When the spirit convicts you of sin you deal with it. When God says something you do it. As a soldier you have to fellowship with the other troops, and train with them, but also you are called to fight, not just talk about it.

In verse 9 the Lord prays for disciples and not for the world "kosmos". When the writers of Scripture used the word kosmos they used it in a negative sense.

This word stands for man, organised in rebellion against God. When the Lord talks about the world, He talks about human beings that are enemies to Him and He does not pray for them. Note this very carefully, for the enemy is active, and those that hate the Lord are not our friends, any more than they were His.

In **John 16:8-11** the Lord gives information regarding praying for unbelievers, and makes it clear that we are to pray for them, for conviction of sin, the certainty of their judgement, and their lack of righteousness, and their need of a Saviour. The Lord provides for them through the cross, He does not pray for them, that is our job. We are here introduced to the plan of God and the different roles within it! We are to find our place and fulfil it fully.

The Lord is praying for security, stability and sanctification for believers, and these are things which the unbelievers are incapable of having in their unsaved state. They can only have that if they become believers. Their destiny is the Lake of Fire. **Revelation 20:14, 15**. The unbeliever comes to the church, without Christ, without hope, without confidence, without stability, and without eternal life.

We are the ones responsible to give the message to the unbeliever, and our task is backed up totally by the Godhead; the Father planned for salvation to be provided, the Son provided the opportunity for salvation, and the Holy Spirit will convict all of their sin and need for a Saviour. We are called to work with God and give the truth of the gospel.

We have the principle in verse 10 of the unity of the Father and the Son in the plan for man, in the fact that everyone who is Christ's is the Father's and vice versa. You believe in God, believe also in me! This is the challenge. You cannot believe in God the Father and reject the Son. God is one in essence but three in persons.

Verse 11. And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are. 12. While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. 13. And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

There are several things in verse 11. It includes the prayer for the same unity between believers as there are in the Trinity. What is the aim of this? It is that we should all work together in the salvation plan for mankind. This is again repeated in verses 21, 22. This is a challenge to all Christians to be obedient to the Father's Plan. It is only within the eternal plan that we are safe and productive. Note the perfect tenses again in this section; we are "given", with eternal results, and we are to walk with the Lord in our called place, and then we will be "fulfilled" as the people we are called to be – blessed forever in Him.

When something is repeated three times like this it is the Lord's way of underlining a crucial point to the plan. There is also a four fold petition for Christians to be as one.

- [i] As He is one with the Father so you are to be one with the Father and with Him.
- [ii] You are to be bound together in the bonds of love.
- [iii] Have concern for one another and,
- [iv] Commitment to the Plan of God.

Hear Dr Chafer's words on this verse. "No human mind can comprehend the importance of this fourfold petition voiced by the Son to the Father. The unity desired is that which the Father alone could accomplish. This prayer began to be answered on the day of Pentecost when believers were by the Holy Spirit baptised into one body, and is constantly answered whenever a soul is saved and thus joined as a member of the body of Christ." Systematic Theology, Volume 5, page 158.

In **Ephesians 4:1-6**, Paul reiterates what John is saying. He is saying that if you have unity you will have love within the brethren. You will have a real concern for their well being and their blessing. James tells us that if our brother requires a coat and we have one available we are to give him it. Be concerned primarily with their spiritual growth, but do not ignore the physical needs. All the apostles who wrote the New Testament emphasised love for God, that works out into daily life, in love for their brethren.

There will however be time when the unity of the earthly body has to be broken when the true believers have to separate from others who are significantly off base spiritually. Denominations such as the Brethren, the Baptists, Presbyterian and Methodists were formed because of the hard heartedness of the organised churches of their day. In some places genuine believers have had to withdraw to be able to worship.

If you have to withdraw you must leave in love. While the organised church is 'broken' the body of Christ is not broken ever, for genuine believers in all churches, and denominations will be seen by their love for their brethren in other fellowships. This is one of the signs of the true believer and the true believer, the true believer has love for their brethren irrespective of denominational labels. **John 15:17, 1 John 3:13.**

Verse 11 tells us that the Lord says that, while he is not going to be in the world, the believers will be, and we are to set the example that He set us. This is going to require the power of the Holy Spirit, and this is going to be provided. He will give the ability to all believers to show the Son's love to the world. The Father will keep all of us safe through this time of ministry.

Jesus says in verse 12 that while He was here He kept them safe, with the implication that when He is gone it is up to the Father to keep them, and He will. The word for keep is very strong - "phulasso" - to secure a position by an armed guard. This implies that our position is impregnable.

This shows that the believer is under the control of the Father, the Son has paid the penalty, the Holy Spirit empowers the believer. You are protected, and you are safe. In the angelic conflict we need divine protection and this verse tells us that we have it! No-one is lost! This is an absolute statement. The word for lost is, "apollumi", the word for destruction, perished, in effect, eternal damnation! The only one lost from the band is Judas, the son of perdition.

The son of perdition refers to Judas Iscariot. Judas was brought into the band of disciples and he was offered grace for three years to demonstrate that God is not willing that any should perish. He however rejected the Lord's Plan, believing his was better, and persisted in rejection, and went to hell.

Son of perdition is "apeleia", a son of waste, a son of loss, a son of destruction. He wasted the time he spent with the Lord. He tried to have his policy rather than the Lord's as the policy of the band. He lost everything and is waiting in Hell now for the final judgement, but he is there by choice. That is the dark side of the gospel message, and it is faced right here in the Lord's high priestly prayer – for He cannot save the determined lost – for they are determined to be lost.

In **Mark 14:3-4** and Matthew 18 it is noted that Judas said that the act of worship by the woman with ointment was a waste. Judas said that he could have used that money, but it has been lost. Had Judas accepted the Lord Jesus Christ as his Saviour he would not have been lost. The result was complete waste.

This was not predestination to hell. Judas was constantly offered salvation but he rejected it. Right at the end at the Last Supper Christ offered Judas the sop, the gift to the most favoured person at the meal and he rejected it. From then on he was in the dark. His rejection was part of, and woven into the plan, as is every free will decision in history, but he and all others are free agents within it.

This is a mystery to us who can only think in terms of what we see in space and time, but at the Great White Throne judgement Judas will not say, 'it was unfair, I didn't have a chance'. The Calvinistic doctrine of double predestination will not be his defence; he will have none! Salvation was available, and he rejected it in favour of his plan! Pride is why he is awaiting the Lake of Fire, and Pride is why all unbelievers will join him there. They prefer their own righteousness to that provided by the Lord, they prefer their plan to God's!

Verse 13 shows that one of the great things about being a Christian is that you can have joy in the midst of the worst that the world can throw at you. In sickness or health you can have the peace, joy and love of the Lord. The reason for this is your position with the Lord forever. The Lord has joy as part of the relationship with the Father. We can also have that joy.

The emphasis here is on relationship. The Lord wants you filled up, "pleroo" - it is in the perfect, passive, participle form which means to be filled up to the full with joy, with lasting results. In the perfect tense this means it goes on forever. The participle form emphasises that you are receiving the joy of Christ through the Father through the power of the Holy Spirit with eternal results. Verse 12 shows that the results of rejecting Christ are eternal while verse 13 shows that the results of accepting him are also eternal. Note that the Lord expresses perfect confidence in the outcome with the words, 'to thee I come'.

Verse 14. I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 15. I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. 16. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 17. Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. 18. As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. 19. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

Verse 14 begins with the statement "I have given them thy word" - the Bible is the Word of God. "I have given" is in the perfect, active, indicative of "didomi" - the Lord has given the policy of the Father. The results of this gift of the Word of God goes on forever within the lives of all who embrace the Word and apply it into the fabric of their lives, which gives a great emphasis as to the sufficiency of the Word of God.

There will be either a growth of joy, or there will be hatred if the Word is preached accurately. If you are hated for the gospel's sake you are in good company. There is a contrast between the verbs here. Didomi is in the perfect tense, the word for hatred is in the Aorist tense. This underlines the Word of God goes on producing results forever, but hatred is only at, 'a point in time' (aorist tense). Those who are ruled by the satanic "hatred" are, "for a point in time", but those who love the Word are forever blessed in Christ.

In Verse 15 the Lord says that he is going to keep us from the evil one. The word used for keeping is "tereo", in the aorist, active, subjunctive. This is in the punctiliar aorist which means that at each point in time we are attacked by the evil one, He will protect us. From the day you are saved until the day I come for you or in death I will protect you. He has the power to keep us from the evil one, and He will keep us. We are protected by the armed guard in verse 12, and the arm of God is around us, in verse 15. God is our guard!

As a believer we are under the care/protection of God. We are bought with a price, and we are His business. We must walk close with Him and trust Him, and know that he will protect us. God's Character depends on Him keeping these promises. Can you trust Him? Yes you can!

As the Lord suffered showing in the midst of the pressures the Character of God, so we must show the character of Christ in our own life. We are in the world but not of the world. The Lord's plan for us is that we are 'of the Word', witnesses 'in the world'.

We however need to be aware not only of our part in God's plan but also be clear about the nature of Satan's plan. We have to see the Lord as our Saviour Lord and are called to live in the light of the presence and the words of the Christ.

We are under the 'much more' care of God. **James 4:6-10**. We are a gift from the Father to the Son. An example of this is **Luke 22:31-32** where Jesus Christ says to Peter that Satan would like to sift him as wheat but that Peter was still under the care of God and would not be sifted and 'blown away'. He would have his 'husks/chaff' blown away but the true seed, the wheat, would remain. So it is with us, even under the greatest pressures, the Lord ensures that we are kept safe eternally, and that while we have great testing it simply blows away the chaff from our lives.

Another passage that makes this clear is **1 Corinthians 10:13** where we are told that we will not be tested above what we are able to bear but will with the testing will have a 'way of escape', so that we may be able to bear it. The Lord is Sovereign over all things, and if the Lord Jesus Christ is praying that you are to be kept, then you will be kept. When we are attacked we will be kept under the 'much more' care of God.

We are not going to be taken out of the world until the Lord comes for his church, but we are confident that we are going to be kept safe in this world until He calls us home. The ark is a good picture where the believers are kept in the midst of the flood. The believer's prayer should never be, 'Lord take me out of this situation', it should be, 'Lord what are you trying to show me through this situation'.

In verse 17 we should note the words, 'sanctify us through thy truth, thy word is truth'. Hagios is the Greek word for holy or sanctified. It is in the verb form hagiazo, and is in the present, active, imperative, it is therefore a command. Literally it says, 'keep on being set apart in your minds and bodies by the application of the Word of God to your life!' We cannot demand anything from God, so we can never use the imperative mood with the Lord, but he uses it with us here! We must grow in Christ likeness in Him, and we do that, only as we apply the Word of God to life.

The method of sanctification is the method used here. It will always work it is using the Scriptures for sanctification. Ho logos, is the definite article ho with the word for 'word', logos, which is one of two words for 'word'. The other word means sayings, words and stories. Logos has the meaning not only of the words but the thinking behind the words. We need to have a relationship in Christ with the mind behind the words.

Verse 18 tells us that as Christ was sent by the Father, as an authority so He sent the Apostles in an authoritative manner. We are not apostles, but we are all preachers of the Word. All teachers of the Word should have the gift of teaching. The teacher should have a burning desire to share the Word of God with others. The goal of the Christian teacher is the sanctification of God's people. All Holy Spirit gifting is for the blessing of others in the church. **1 Corinthians 12:7, 11-13, 25-31**. The Word is only working if you are being made holy in your life. We must teach with authority as this is God's word to man. **John 3:16, 36, 14:16, Acts 4:12**.

The Lord in verse 19 is committing His will to the will of the Father. He is stating that moment by moment He is going to be obedient to the plan so that all who follow Him may be obedient to the Father's plan. The objective is the Cross. It is because of the believers that He is going to do the Father's plan. Note His objective! It is that we might all be sanctified in the truth. **Mark 10:45**.

APPLICATION

Our job in discipling and evangelism is to make God known. God's purpose for us as Bible teachers is that those young people we teach might get to know God, and grow to be like Him. Anything else is superfluous.

Your five or ten minute devotional for teenagers is not sufficient. They should have a full Bible Class on a Sunday morning or afternoon. You have to teach the young people about the character of God and then make clear the Lord's demand for their life, for holiness, and teach them basic survival lessons, anything less and you have not prepared them for the real world they are operating in.

For example - Proverbs is written about sexual temptation, and should be taught to the youth group. Get them to know God and His character and standards. They will know their own weaknesses and the sin in their life. Our job as pastors is to get them to know the remedy for sin in their life. The pastor is held responsible for the sins of the church. As a minister you are a watchman. You are to sound the alarm when danger threatens. Failure to warn and teach = discipline for the pastor! **Ezekiel 3:1-22, 27**.

The Bible is a solemn trust given to us by our Father. Do we meditate on it, do we apply it. People may have failed but if they have kept the Lord's Word and know that it is important, they will be able to be restored.

Our unbelieving friends are lost and wasting their lives. Often at the time they realise it, this is called by some, a mid life crisis. Many times they turn to the wrong things rather than turning to the only one who can give them meaning, hope and direction in their lives. All who reject the Lord are like Judas, the sons and daughters of perdition.

If you are in a situation you are there because the Lord wants you to be in that situation. This will apply even if you are there because of your sin! Now, stop at this point and think about it! Even if sin has put you under pressure, the Lord has His hand on the 'pressure handle', and God specializes in turning cursing into blessing. Obey and be blessed. **Romans 8:28**.

His reason for the pressure is to be sought, that you might repent and be restored to service, and learn from the sinful pattern you have got into, and so not fall again there! Don't be a slow learner Christian! Hear the Holy Spirit's message to your soul. We should not be tied up with this world or it's rubbish-like philosophies. We have a heavenly destiny. Let's remind ourselves of that.

We are to be witnesses here, like cities on a hill, lights in a dark place. **Matthew 5:13-16**. We are not to seek power and position, nor be enticed by the success trap of the satanic system. We have lives that are 'hid with Christ in God'. We are, even now, in the heavenly places - **Hebrews 3:1**. Our rewards are in heaven. What the world thinks as success should not be our aim.

If you are going to have people grow in the Bible class you need to instruct them systematically, a point here and a point there, **Isaiah 28:13**, and so they slowly, under the teaching of the Holy Spirit, start to put things together.

Systematic verse by verse teaching should be a major part of all our preaching. This has to do with 'logos', and it's communication through the systematic teaching of the Word of God. You need to stress the mind behind the words.

DOCTRINES

CHRIST: DEITY OF CHRIST see page 124

CHRISTIAN LIFE: LOVE – see page 55

CHRISTIAN LIFE: SEPARATION –see page 75

GOD: PLAN OF GOD – see page 21

GOD: TRINITY – see page 39

ANGELS: SATANIC ATTACK ON BELIEVERS – see page 89

GRACE

1. Grace is all that God is free to do for man on the basis of the cross. Therefore Grace is unmerited favour from God.

2. Grace depends on the character of God therefore Grace depends on who and what God is. Grace is what God can do for man and still be true to his own character.

3. The believer must recognise the difference between legalism and grace. Legalism is man's work intruding upon the plan of God.

4. The greatest thing God can do for the saved person is to make him exactly like His Son Jesus Christ. This is accomplished in three stages of sanctification.

5. Positional Sanctification: At Salvation every believer enters into union with Christ. (**Hebrews 1:2**) Jesus Christ is seated at the right hand of the Father and is therefore superior to all angels in his humanity. At the point of salvation we are entered into union with Christ thus we are positionally higher than angels. We are positionally seated with Christ at God's right hand.

6. Experiential Sanctification: During the Christian's life on the earth the time spent under the power of the Holy Spirit. During this time we produce the character of God in our lives - gold, silver, precious stones. (**1 Corinthians 3:12-15**)

7. Ultimate Sanctification: When the believer receives a resurrection body he loses the sin nature and all human good. At this point the believer is physically superior to all angels. He remains in this perfect state eternally.

8. All believers have tasted of Grace at least once (**1 Peter 2:3**). This refers to the point of Salvation at which the believer receives at least 34 things which he did not earn or deserve. (**Ephesians 2:8, 9**) Disorientation to grace is the believer's greatest occupational hazard in his Christian life. (**Galatians 5:4, Hebrews 12:15**)

9. The divine attitude to grace is expressed in (**Isaiah 30:18, 19**) God is constantly waiting to pour out his blessing on all believers in the Christian life.

10. Grace in salvation is expressed in many ways. It is always the same - believing in Jesus Christ (**Psalms 103:8-12, Romans 3:23-4, Romans 4:4, 5:20, Ephesians 2:8, 9**)

11. There are many ways in which the Christian life expresses GRACE:

- a) Prayer (**Hebrews 4:16**)
- b) Suffering (**2 Corinthians 12:9, 10**)
- c) Growth (**2 Peter 3:18**)

- d) Stability (**1 Peter 5:12**)
- e) Lifestyle (**Hebrews 12:28, 2 Corinthians 1:12**)
- f) Production of Divine Good (**1 Corinthians 15:10, 2 Corinthians 6:1**)

12. Grace is the correct attitude in relation to giving. (**2 Corinthians 8 & 9**)

13. Grace is the only means of coping with suffering in the Christian life. (**2 Corinthians 12:7-10**) Through Grace God is able to bless the believer in the midst of the pressures and adversities of life. (**1 Peter 1:6,7**)

14. Implications of grace:

- a) God is perfect, his plan is perfect.
- b) A perfect plan can only originate from a perfect God.
- c) If man could do anything in the plan of God the plan would no longer be perfect.
- d) A plan is no stronger than its weakest link. Grace therefore excludes all human merit, all human ability.
- e) Legalism, human works is the enemy of Grace.
- f) The works of human righteousness have therefore no place in the plan of God. (**Isaiah 64:6**)

ETERNITY FUTURE

In eternity future:

1. God reveals to us exceeding riches of His grace (**Ephesians 2:7**).
2. God brings many sons into glory (**Hebrews 2:10**).
3. Believers enjoy an inheritance (**1 Peter 1:4**).
4. It is God's purpose for the church to know the manifold wisdom of God (**Ephesians 3:10**).
5. All former things pass away. There will be no more death, sorrow, pain, crying, sea, night or sun. (**Revelation 21:1-5,23**)
6. The curse will be lifted (**Revelation 22:3**).
7. All things in heaven and earth will be gathered in Him (**Ephesians 1:10**).
8. The present creation will be forgotten (**Isaiah 65:17**).
9. A river of water of life will run (**Revelation 22:1**).
10. The tree of life will be seen again (**Revelation 22:2**).
11. The Son of God will rule eternally (**Daniel 2:44; 7:13,14**).
12. He will still be subject to the Father (**John 10:29; 1 Corinthians 15:28**).
13. The lake of fire will continue forever (**Isaiah 66:24; Revelation 14:11**).

ETERNITY PAST

1. Jesus Christ existed before the foundation of the world in glory with God the Father and God the Holy Spirit (**John 1:1-2; 17:5, 24**).
2. In eternity past the Godhead agreed to permit sin to become manifest in the world of men before being eliminated forever from the universe (**Hebrews 9:26**).
3. In eternity past the Son of God agreed to come to earth as a human being to destroy the works of the devil (**1 John 3:8**).

4. In eternity past it was ordained that Christ would be slain for the ungodly (**1 Peter 1:18-20; Hebrews 10:5-10**).
5. In eternity past the world and stars were created by Jesus Christ (**Hebrews 1:10; Colossians 1:16**).
6. Man was placed on the earth to be made "a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men (**1 Corinthians 4:9**).
7. In eternity past believers were chosen in Christ (**Ephesians 1:4**). Christ is chosen, we share as believers his election.
8. In eternity past a book was written containing the names of those who would believe and survive the destruction of the universe (**Philippians 4:3; Revelation 17:8; 20:15**).

However, whilst God knew who would believe, he did not coerce human free will.

JUDAS - BETRAYAL

1. SCRIPTURE **Matthew 26:14-16, 25; 27:3-10. Mark 14:1-11. Luke 22:3-6. John 12:3-6; 13:2, 27-30, Acts 1:18, 19.**

2. BIOGRAPHY

Judas was one of the twelve disciples of Jesus Christ. He was the son of Simon (**John 6:71**) and was known as Judas Iscariot. Iscariot indicates that he was from Kerioth which was located in Moab (**Jeremiah 48:24, 41 Amos 2:2**) or Kerioth Hezron (**Joshua 15:25**) which was situated 20 kilometres south of Hebron. Judas was the treasurer (**John 13:29**) and was also a thief (**John 12:6**). It was Judas who criticised Mary when she anointed the Lord with precious ointment (**John 12 3-5**). The ointment he saw as a source of income. His avarice eventually became so overpowering that he conspired with the religious leaders of the time to betray Jesus. He did not understand the whole implications of his action because when he saw what the authorities were doing to Jesus Christ, he felt sorry for his actions and eventually committed suicide (**Acts 1:18,19**).

3. EVALUATION

- a) Judas always appeared last on the list of disciples (**Mark 3:14-19**).
- b) He was described as a traitor (Luke 6:16) and betrayer (**Matthew 10:4**).
- c) Judas was an unbeliever who did not address Jesus as Lord (Kurios) but Rabbi - Teacher (**Matthew 26:25**).
- d) At Simon the leper's house, Mary came and anointed the feet of Jesus with ointment while they were eating (**Mark 14:3**).
- e) The disciples, led by Judas, complained about the waste of money, estimating it at a year's salary (**Mark 14:5**).
- f) After this Judas left to barter with the chief priests to betray Jesus (**Mark 14:10, 11; Zechariah 11:12; Exodus 21:32**).
- g) At the last supper, Jesus gave Judas his last chance to be saved when he offered the sop, a portion of food reserved for honoured guests (**John 13:26**).
- h) Judas rejected Jesus and was then indwelt by Satan (**John 13:27**). He then went to betray Jesus.
- i) Judas betrayed Jesus with a kiss (**Matthew 26:47-50**).
- j) When Judas saw that Jesus was to be condemned he felt sorry (Metamelomai, Gk.) for what he had done (**Matthew 27:3**) but did not repent (Metanoeo, Gk.) or change his mind about Jesus Christ (**2 Corinthians 7:10**).
- k) He went and hanged himself (**Matthew 27:5**) and his body fell into the Kidron Valley (**Acts 1:18, 19**), at Alcadema - the field of blood (**Zechariah 11:12, 13**).

4. PRINCIPLES

- a) We should not doubt the Lord's sincerity in calling Judas to be a disciple. Jesus appealed to Judas on many occasions to believe in Him (**2 Peter 3:9**).
- b) Jesus' fore-knowledge does not imply fore-ordination that Judas must become the traitor.
- c) Judas was never a true believer. He remained a son of perdition (**John 17:12**).
- d) Unbelievers are called the sons of Satan (**John 8:44**).
- e) He was lost because he was never truly saved (**John 3:36**).
- f) Judas is an awful warning of the future for the unconverted follower of Jesus (**Romans 8:9b**).

- g) He was doomed and damned because he chose to be, and God confirmed him in that choice (**Matthew 26:14-25**).
- h) The love of money is the root of all evil (**1 Timothy 6:10**).
- i) Feeling sorry for your sins does not save; it is a change to belief in Christ (**Hebrews 12:16, 17**).
- j) Religious apostates reject the truth and will dispose of collaborators as soon as they are no longer useful to them (**Revelation 17:16**).
- k) The unbeliever ends his life in misery (e.g. suicide) (**Psalms 37:38; Psalm 73:17, 18**).

JUDAS - OUTLINE OF JUDAS' LIFE

1. His Opportunities

- a) He was from the tribe of Judah (**John 6:71**)
- b) He was called by Christ. (**Luke 6:16**)
- c) He was one of the twelve (**Matthew 10:4**)
- d) He was treasurer of the disciples. (**John 12:6**)
- e) He was present at the Last Supper. (**John 13:26**)

2. His Sowing

- a) He was covetous. (**John 12:4-6**)
- b) He was a thief. (**John 12:6**)
- c) He was Satan possessed. (**Luke 22:3**)
- d) He bargained to betray Jesus. (**Mark 14:10, 11**)
- e) He was bribed to become a traitor. (**Matthew 26:14-16**)

3. His Reaping

- a) His repentance. (**Matthew 27:3**)
- b) His act of restitution. (**Matthew 27:4**)
- c) His death. (**Matthew 27:5, Acts 1:18**)
- d) His curse. (**Acts 1:20**)
- e) His replacement. (**1 Corinthians 15:7-10**)

HARMONY

CHRIST PRAYS FOR HIS DISCIPLES

I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word. Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee. For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me. I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine. And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them.

THE LORD PRAYS FOR HIS IMMINENT DEPARTURE

And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are. While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

PROTECTION FOR THE DISCIPLES

I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. I pray not that thou shouldst take them out of the world, but that thou shouldst keep them from the evil. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

146 L – CHRIST PRAYS FOR ALL BELIEVERS - JOHN 17:20-26

John 17:20 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; 21 That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. 22 And the glory which **thou gavest me I have given them**; that they may be one, even as we are one: 23 I in them, and thou in me, that they **may be made perfect** in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. 24 Father, I will that they also, whom **thou hast given me**, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which **thou hast given me**: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. 25 O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. 26 And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them.

KEY WORDS

Pray	Erotao	Pray, Request [Present Active Indicative]
Shall believe	Pisteuo	Believe [Present Active Participle]
Word	Logos	Word
May be	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Subjunctive]
One	Hies	One
Father	Pater	Father
Art	-	Not in original
May be	Eimi	Keeps on being [Present Active Subjunctive]
World	Kosmos	World
Believe	Pisteuo	Believe [Present Active Subjunctive]
Sent	Apostello	Send [Aorist Active Indicative]
Glory	Doxa	Glory
Gavest	Didomi	Give [Perfect Active Indicative]
Given	Didomi	Give [Perfect Active Indicative]
May be	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Subjunctive]
Are	Eimi	Keep on being
May be	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Subjunctive]
Made perfect	Telioo	Made perfect, Completed [Perfect Passive Participle]
Know	Ginosko	Know [Present Active Subjunctive]
Sent	Apostello	Send [Aorist Active Indicative]
Loved	Agapao	Love [Aorist Active Indicative]
Loved	Agapao	Love [Aorist Active Indicative]
Father	Pater	Father
Will	Thelo	Desire, Wish, Will [Present Active Indicative]
Given	Didomi	Give [Perfect Active Indicative]
Be	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Am	Eimi	Be [Present Active Subjunctive]
Behold	Theoreo	Behold, See [Present Active Subjunctive]
Given	Didomi	Give [Perfect Active Indicative]
Lovedst	Agapao	Love [Aorist Active Indicative]
Before	Pro	Before
Foundation	Katabole	Foundation
World	Kosmos	World
Righteous	Dikaios	Righteous
Known	Ginosko	Know [Aorist Active Indicative]
Known	Ginosko	Know [Aorist Active Indicative]
Known	Ginosko	Know [Aorist Active Indicative]
Sent	Apostello	Send [Aorist Active Indicative]
Have declared	Gnorizo	Declare, Make known, Certify [Aorist Active Indicative]
Name	Onoma	Name
Will declare	Gnorizo	Declare, Make known, Certify [Future Active Indicative]
Love	Agape	Love
Loved	Agapao	Love [Aorist Active Indicative]
May be	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Subjunctive]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS – None found

DIDOMI - GIVE occurs 413 times in the New Testament with 36 times in the Perfect Tense. On 26 occasions it is in the Active Voice leaving 10 in the Passive. The vast majority of the Perfect Tenses occur in the Gospel of John with 24, and with 3 in 1 John which accounts for 75% of all the occurrences.

TELEIOO – MADE PERFECT PERFECTED - Occurs 24 times in the New Testament with 9 times in the Perfect Tense with all being in the Passive Voice showing that all receive perfection through the Lord Jesus Christ. 2 Corinthians 5:21.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found**REFLECTION**

Verse 20. Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; **21.** That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. **22.** And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: **23.** I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. **24.** Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. **25.** O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. **26.** And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them.

You can put your name in verse 20. You have believed because someone has preached to you in the apostolic succession. There are twelve apostles of the Lamb as shown in the book of the Revelation. You cannot call yourself an apostle today, but you are “sent out” just as they were, and you go with their teaching ringing in your ears, **Jude 3**. Refer, **Revelation 21:14**, where it states that there are 12 apostles of the Lamb. We are not apostles – be very scared of those who claim such things, for they have an arrogance that betrays their origin. **John 8:44**.

The apostles were those who were given oversight of the churches in the early stages, and they laid the foundations upon which we are all built. There were only 12, and from amongst them were those who were Holy Spirit anointed to be the writers of Scripture. Non apostolic writers of Scripture were closely associated with the apostles; Mark with Peter for example, and Luke with Paul. This is why **Jude 3** is so important. We are to rest on the truths once and for all delivered to the saints by the holy hands and Holy Spirit gifting of the apostles.

Verse 21 The semi colon at the end of verse 20 means that this verse is an explanation of it. The result of the Lord's work is that we are in relationship with one another and with the Father. Jesus order to us is, *'Love one another as I have loved you'*. *'Love one another, that all men may know that you are many disciples'*.

The unity of the believer with the Father is demonstrated with the unity of the believer with the believer. We have a standard to follow, and it is the standard of the Lord. Turn back to Isaiah 53, so that you come to terms directly with the Lord's standard. **Isaiah 53:1-12**.

The importance of the Letters of John is to bring out and expand on verses like this. If you do not have love in the midst of your fellowship with the Lord and with your brethren you do not have unity with the Lord Jesus Christ, or with the Father. Christ's prayer is perfect, and His prayer will always be answered, and that means genuine believers are known by their love of the brethren. Note the perfect tenses again in this section - we are “given” with eternal results, and we are “fulfilled” in Him – with eternal results.

In Verse 23 the emphasis is on life not lips. The Lord Jesus Christ is the unique person of the universe; He is the only Saviour. We are completed in Him, and must show the Character of God. We need to love Him, serve Him, and be obedient as well as having a love towards the other believers. If we are not here in this verse, we are “none of His”! **Romans 8:9**. Let us examine ourselves and ensure we are walking in loving fellowship with Him!

The Lord's concern for us really comes through here. Here He continues to pray for us and as a result we should have peace in our soul. We are sanctified through His Word, and protected by His presence. When He prayed for us He prayed perfectly, and we can rest on His provision in all these things.

We are loved by the Lord Jesus Christ, and we are loved of the Father, and we are fellowshiped with by the Holy Spirit in loving comforting encouragement. Many people are totally unaware of these things, and yet to live for Christ we must know them and live in their daily reality.

OUR POSITION IN CHRIST

1. We have a position with Christ rather than a position with the cosmos system. We are separated from the world and are different from them. We have a new position in Christ - **Ephesians 2:6**.
2. We have a new position of partnership with Christ, we are never alone. - **Colossians 3:4**, John 17. We have a communion with Him. He says that he will never put us in a situation without a way of escape. The way of escape is through Christ.
3. We are workers together with God, we are in His service - **2 Corinthians 3:9, 1:9, 6:1**.
4. We are ministers of a new covenant, we have a new message to man. **1 Corinthians 3:6, 6:4**.
5. We are ambassadors for Christ - **2 Corinthians 5:20**.
6. We are living epistles, we are letters to a lost and unsaved world. Our lives should be such that Christ should be read from the book of our lives. Our life and lips should tell of Christ and Him alone.
7. We are members of the Royal Family - **Galatians 6:10, 1 Peter 2:9**.
8. We are united with the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit - we are in the Father, He is in us - **Ephesians 4:6**, we are in Christ - **John 14:20**. He is in us - **Colossians 1:26**, we are in the Spirit and He is in us - **Romans 8:9**.

We are united forever to God. We are not part of a universal soul. That is new age. We have been entered into a living union with a personal God.

9. We are members of his body, branches of his vine, living stones, his building, sheep of his fold, part of his bride, priests in His kingdom, saints set apart for His glory.

Verse 24. We get to know him in the world now through the "Word of Truth" because His Word is Truth. We have to be gripped by the things that the Lord has done for us, and what the Lord has to do with us, that we might see our destiny and his glory, and reflect that glory to the world that needs to see it. Note the Lord's will is expressed here, not as a command, but as a desire.

2 Corinthians 5:6 - 9, 10-15 states that our destiny is to be with the Lord Jesus Christ where He is so that wherever we go we might take Him with us; that we might be with Him. The purpose of this chapter in 2 Corinthians is that we might appreciate our position and seek to live in the love of the Lord God 'in Christ Jesus'. This is the point behind the Lord's Prayer in John 17.

In addition we need to realise that we will appear before the judgement seat of Christ (Greek word 'bema' - the bar of judgement) where what we have done will be evaluated for rewards. We are called to have the same attitude towards our life whether we are absent from him here on earth, or we are with Him in heaven. We should be committed to see what the Lord would have done in each situation, and "just do it" with Holy Spirit power.

Remember there are two different types of works done by us as believers in the Lord, 'Divine Good Works', done in the power of the Holy Spirit, which have permanent rewards.

The second category of works done in time is 'Human Good Work', done in the power of the flesh, and they are not acceptable to God - as the works of Cain were not acceptable to God. Human Good is classified as filthy rags in **Isaiah 64:6**.

We should aim to win the rewards when we appear before the judgement seat of Christ and strive now towards living in accordance with the high calling of God in Christ Jesus. We should live according to our place within the new creation. You cannot serve God and mammon. As Christians we must commit ourselves completely and thoroughly.

In verse 25 we have the righteousness of Christ and the righteousness of the Father. Jesus prays, "righteous Father". The incarnation of Christ shows us the perfect righteousness of God – and in the Spirit we receive the "Breastplate of Righteousness" as a gift/provision for our daily life. **Ephesians 6:14**.

By Christ's coming man is finally and fully condemned as a sinner and found wanting against the perfect standard of Christ. But you cannot criticise God for His righteousness, for with His complete condemnation of man's sin, through the life and death of the Lord Jesus Christ, He has provided perfect and complete salvation through the Cross. The Father knows us and has put His finger on our problem, and through His plan provides perfectly for us, for our salvation and for our Christian growth.

God knows all the facts when He allows things to happen to us, there is glory in it, if we let Him teach us through it. We should not be moaning, 'Lord, why do you do that?', but, 'Lord what do you want me to learn through this and how are you going to guide me through it?'

When you pray to the Father you should think of His absolutely perfect character, and perfect plan. If you keep this in mind you will orient your mind and target your prayers much more accurately. This is seen in the Psalms, where David poured out his heart to the Lord, and then rested in the Lord, basing all his thoughts and prayers upon the Lord's perfect character. God does not overlook sin, but meets it with righteousness and justice.

Verse 26. The disciples knew that He was the Messiah, that he had been sent to be over Israel. The Lord has perfectly proclaimed the Father in words, ministry and works. He is going to continue to do this right until the end. On the Cross you see the glory of God. When people say, "How do you know that God loves you?" Well - all you need to do is to say, look at the Cross and see what the Saviour did.

The Lord could have got off the Cross and come down. There were twelve legions of angels waiting to assist him. It was not the nails and ropes that held the Lord to the Cross it was his obedience to the Father's plan which involved the love of God for us all. This is the same love which keeps you safe in the Devil's world today. That thought should crush our pride, and move us forward into service and worship, with humility and thankfulness.

Where the Lord was praying, He could look across the valley to the city of Jerusalem. The time is moving along now. Judas has gone to the chief priests but the disciples are oblivious to all this. They are tired out. The Lord asked them to watch and pray but they all slept. He must tell them of these events after the Resurrection.

He watches the procession of the torches of the men Judas leads from the Temple courts towards the garden, and wakes the disciples up just in time for Judas to arrest Him. They all forget what they have been told, and other than John and Peter, they skulk away into the night and it is not until the resurrection of the Lord that they remember the significance of all these things.

We are so much like the apostles are we not? We hear great things from the Word of God, and then go away and sin, and then, 'wake up', and remember the Word. Learn from your errors and mistakes. Throw yourself back on the mercy and forgiveness of the Lord, and in love and commitment and obedience, return to worship and serve Him again.

For the events in the Garden of Gethsemane we have to read the parallel and complementary passages in the Synoptic Gospels. **Matthew 26:30- 47, Luke 19:13**. Note the Lord's instructions. 'Watch, work, witness and serve me until I come', says the Lord. The motto that sums up John 17 is 'watch and pray'. These disciples all went out, and were finally obedient, and except for John they all died a martyr's death.

APPLICATION

Many people are calling themselves Christian today. The cults, the New Age movement and many others, even groups like some of the Buddhist and Hindu sects are calling themselves "gods" and talk about "growing into the god head", and many claim that they are following the words of Jesus.

However we can only show our relationship with God through our lives. What does the world see when they see us, do they see Jesus Christ?

Be careful about using new age concepts with Christian style talking. We have a different message to the New Age movement. We are to provide beacons of light in the devils world and pluck people as brands from the burning, not join them in the ashes of their nonsense.

We are the messengers of salvation and sanctification in the world. We are to be thoroughly furnished or completed to all good works. It is only if the grace of God fills you, that you can show grace. It is the work of the Holy Spirit and we are to be filled and active daily, in God's power alone.

Are we where the Lord is wanting us to be today? It is not a case of whether Christ is with you, but whether you are with the Lord. It is only through that, that we are able to share the love of the Father for the Son. It is not the case of 'name it and claim it'. It is a case of, 'in Him, and living in the sphere of His loving service'.

You should pray that you might walk where He is, and not be asking Him to bless you where you are. Are you with Him or are you doing your own thing today? In order to be sure you are where He wants you to be, you need to sort out any sin problems in your life. He wants us to receive His love, and live in the sphere of the love the Father has for Him.

DOCTRINES

CHRISTIAN LIFE: DESTINY OF BELIEVERS - see page 116

CHRISTIAN LIFE: ETERNAL SECURITY – see page 40

CHRISTIAN LIFE: REWARDS AND CROWNS –see page 15

CHURCH: APOSTLESHIP

1. Apostleship is the highest spiritual gift in the Church. - Like all other spiritual gifts it was sovereignly bestowed by the Holy Spirit to certain individuals (**1 Corinthians 12:11, 28, Ephesians 4:11**)
2. Apostleship was a temporary gift. It was designed to establish and direct the early church until the canon of scripture was completed.
3. The apostles to the church were appointed after the resurrection of Jesus Christ (**Ephesians 4:8**) Hence, they must be distinguished from the "Apostles to Israel" in (**Matthew 10:2ff**)
4. This spiritual gift exercised authority over all local churches. Once the canon of scripture was complete the gift was removed (**1 Corinthians 13:10**). Today all local churches are autonomous with authority vested in the canon of scripture and the local pastor
5. The qualification of apostles:- Apostles had to be eye witnesses to the resurrection of Christ. This qualified the eleven, Paul being qualified on the Damascus Road (**Acts 1:22, 1 Corinthians 9:1, 15:8,9**)
6. The authority of the apostles was established by the possession of certain temporary gifts that went with this gift. Apostles also had the gifts of miracles, healing and tongues (**Acts 5:15, 16:16-18, 28:8-9**)
7. There are twelve apostles (**Revelation 21:14**). We have the eleven (excluding Judas). Mathias was elected by men, but not appointed by God (**Acts 1:26**). The twelfth apostle was Paul (**1 Corinthians 15:7-10**). Paul was appointed by God on the road to Damascus.
8. The word "apostle" means "one sent". Hence, some believers are called apostles in this sense. They include Barnabas (**Acts 1 4:14, Galatians 2:9**), James (half brother of Jesus) (**1 Corinthians 15:7, Galatians 1:19**), Apollos (**1 Corinthians 4:6**), Silas and Timothy (**1 Thessalonians 1:1**).

JUDGEMENT: - JUDGEMENT SEAT OF CHRIST

1. There are three types of judgement for believers in the Church Age.

a) Judgement of Sins:- The Lord Jesus Christ on the cross substituted the payment of all man's sins. The penalty of sin is death. **(Romans 6:23)** There is therefore no judgement for those in Christ Jesus. (Romans 8:1). The substitutionary death is given in **2 Corinthians 5:19-21, Galatians 3:13**.

b) Judgement of Self:- We are told that if we judge ourselves we shall not be judged. Failure to do so brings discipline. **(1 Corinthians 5:1-5, 11:31, 32, 2 Corinthians 2:5-7, Hebrews 12:7, 1 John 1:9)**

c) Judgement Seat of Christ:- This is the evaluation of the production of believers for the purpose of reward **(2 Corinthians 5:10)**

2. The Judgement Seat of Christ is a time of reward. Our human works (wood, hay, stubble) will be burned, our works in the power of the Spirit (gold, silver, precious stones) will be rewarded. **(1 Corinthians 3:11-16)**.

3. At the Judgement Seat of Christ the believer can be denied reward but can never lose his salvation. **(2 Timothy 2:12-13)**

4. Backslidden believers have no reward at the Judgement Seat of Christ. **(Hebrews 6:7-12)**

5. The Judgement Seat of Christ is illustrated by the famous athletic games in the ancient world. **(1 Corinthians 9:24-27)**

6. Rewards at the Judgement Seat of Christ are based on grace. **(James 2:12, 13)**

7. Since we will be judged by Christ, we are not to judge each other **(Matthew 7:1-2)**

HARMONY**CHRIST PRAYS FOR ALL BELIEVERS**

Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them.

DOCTRINES

DOCTRINE	SECTION	PAGE
ANGELS: SATAN – ADVERSARY	146D	61
ANGELS: SATANIC ATTACK ON BELIEVERS	146G	89
ANGELS: SATANIC STRATEGIES AND TACTICS	146G	90
ANGELS: SATAN'S DESTINY	146H	105
CHRIST: BRANCH – A PICTURE OF CHRIST	146E	74
CHRIST: DEITY	146J	124
CHRIST: DEITY OF CHRIST AND THE BELIEVER	146J	125
CHRIST: HUMILIATION AND EXALTATION	146B	20
CHRIST: HYPOSTATIC UNION	146C	45
CHRIST: I AM	146B	21
CHRIST: KENOSIS OF CHRIST	146C	46
CHRIST: RESURRECTION BODY	146A	16
CHRISTIAN LIFE: ADOPTION AS A CHILD OF GOD	146J	126
CHRISTIAN LIFE: AMBASSADOR	146F	81
CHRISTIAN LIFE: BACKSLIDING AND RECOVERY	146H	105
CHRISTIAN LIFE: DESTINY OF BELIEVERS	146 I	116
CHRISTIAN LIFE: ETERNAL SECURITY	146C	40
CHRISTIAN LIFE: EVANGELISM	146G	69
CHRISTIAN LIFE: EVANGELISM – FISHERS OF MEN	146G	92
CHRISTIAN LIFE: EVANGELISM – N T PATTERN	146G	93
CHRISTIAN LIFE: FASTING	146C	46
CHRISTIAN LIFE: FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT	146E	72
CHRISTIAN LIFE: INDWELLING OF CHRIST	146D	58
CHRISTIAN LIFE: LOVE	146D	55
CHRISTIAN LIFE: MATURITY	146F	81
CHRISTIAN LIFE: MATURITY – CROSS TO CROWN	146F	82
CHRISTIAN LIFE: MATURITY – SIGNS OF MATURITY	146F	83
CHRISTIAN LIFE: POSITION IN CHRIST	146C	37
CHRISTIAN LIFE: PRAYER	146C	44
CHRISTIAN LIFE: OBEDIENCE	146D	54
CHRISTIAN LIFE: OVERCOMER	146 I	114
CHRISTIAN LIFE: OVERCOMING BY FAITH	146 I	114
CHRISTIAN LIFE: REWARDS AND CROWNS	146A	15
CHRISTIAN LIFE: SEPARATION	146E	75
CHRISTIAN LIFE: SERVICE	146E	76
CHRISTIAN LIFE: SPIRITUALITY	146E	74
CHRISTIAN LIFE: STABILITY	146 I	117
CHURCH: APOSTLESHIP	146L	143
ETERNITY FUTURE	146K	136
ETERNITY PAST	146K	136
FEAR	146D	59
GOD: CHARACTER OF GOD	146C	38
GOD: ELECTION AND PREDESTINATION	146J	126
GOD: PLAN OF GOD	146B	21
GOD: TRINITY	146C	39
GOD: WORK OF THE FATHER AND THE SPIRIT	146B	28
GRACE	146K	135

DOCTRINES [continued]

DOCTRINE	SECTION	PAGE
HOLY SPIRIT: COMFORTER	146C	43
HOLY SPIRIT: FILLING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT	146C	42
HOLY SPIRIT: HOLY SPIRIT IS GOD	146C	40
HOLY SPIRIT: MINISTRY IN OT	146C	41
HOLY SPIRIT: MINISTRY TO CHRIST	146C	41
HOLY SPIRIT: MINISTRY IN NT	146C	42
HOLY SPIRIT: SINS AGAINST	146H	104
HOLY SPIRIT: TEACHER	146C	43
JEWISH WEDDING	146A	11
JUDAS: BETRAYAL	146K	137
JUDAS: OUTLINE OF JUDAS LIFE	146K	138
JUDGEMENT: JUDGEMENT SEAT OF CHRIST	146L	144
PARABLES	146 I	115
PARABLES OF CHRIST	146 I	115
PEACE	146D	59
PERSECUTION	146 I	116
RAPTURE	146A	12
RAPTURE:- PRE TRIBULATION	146A	12
RELIGION	146B	23
RESURRECTION	146A	15
SALVATION: IMPUTATION	146C	39
SIN: FRUIT OF THE OLD SIN NATURE	146E	73
SIN: IMPUTATION	146C	39
SIN: SIN UNTO DEATH	146E	74
SIN: UNPARDONABLE SIN	146H	104
UNBELIEVER	146 I	117
WORLD	146D	58
WORLDLINESS	146G	91
WORRY	146A	13

HARMONY

THE PROMISED RETURN OF CHRIST

Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also.

CHRIST ANSWERS THOMAS

And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know. Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way? Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

CHRIST ANSWERS PHILIP

Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father? Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works. Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.

RELATIONSHIP WITH GOD THROUGH CHRIST

And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it. If ye love me, keep my commandments.

THE PROMISE OF ANOTHER COMFORTER

And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you. I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you. Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also. At that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you.

JESUS ANSWERS JUDAS NOT ISCARIOT

He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him. Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world? Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me. These things have I spoken unto you, being yet present with you. But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

CHRIST'S RETURN TO THE FATHER

Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I. And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye might believe. Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me. But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence.

RELATIONSHIP OF BELIEVERS WITH CHRIST

I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing. If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

GLORIFICATION OF GOD

Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love. If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love. These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.

RELATIONSHIP OF BELIEVERS TO EACH OTHER

This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you. Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you. These things I command you, that ye love one another.

RELATIONSHIP OF BELIEVERS TO THE WORLD

If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me.

If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloak for their sin. He that hateth me hateth my Father also. If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father. But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause.

THE OTHER COMFORTER

But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me: And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

PERSECUTION OF BELIEVERS

These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended. They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service. And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me. But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you. But now I go my way to him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou? But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart.

MINISTRY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgement: Of sin, because they believe not on me; Of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more; Of judgement, because the prince of this world is judged.

I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come. He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you. All things that the Father hath are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

PREDICTION OF CHRIST'S DEATH AND RESURRECTION

A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father. Then said some of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me: and, Because I go to the Father? They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith.

Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye enquire among yourselves of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me? Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.

A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world. And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you.

PRAYER TO THE FATHER THROUGH CHRIST

And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you. Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full. These things have I spoken unto you in proverbs: but the time cometh, when I shall no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father. At that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you: For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God. I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father.

THE DISCIPLES UNDERSTAND BUT WILL FAIL

His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no proverb. Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God. Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe? Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.

CHRIST PRAYS FOR HIMSELF

These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee: As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him. And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent. I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do. And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

CHRIST PRAYS FOR HIS DISCIPLES

I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word. Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee. For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me. I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine. And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them.

THE LORD PRAYS FOR HIS IMMINENT DEPARTURE

And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are. While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

PROTECTION FOR THE DISCIPLES

I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

CHRIST PRAYS FOR ALL BELIEVERS

Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them.